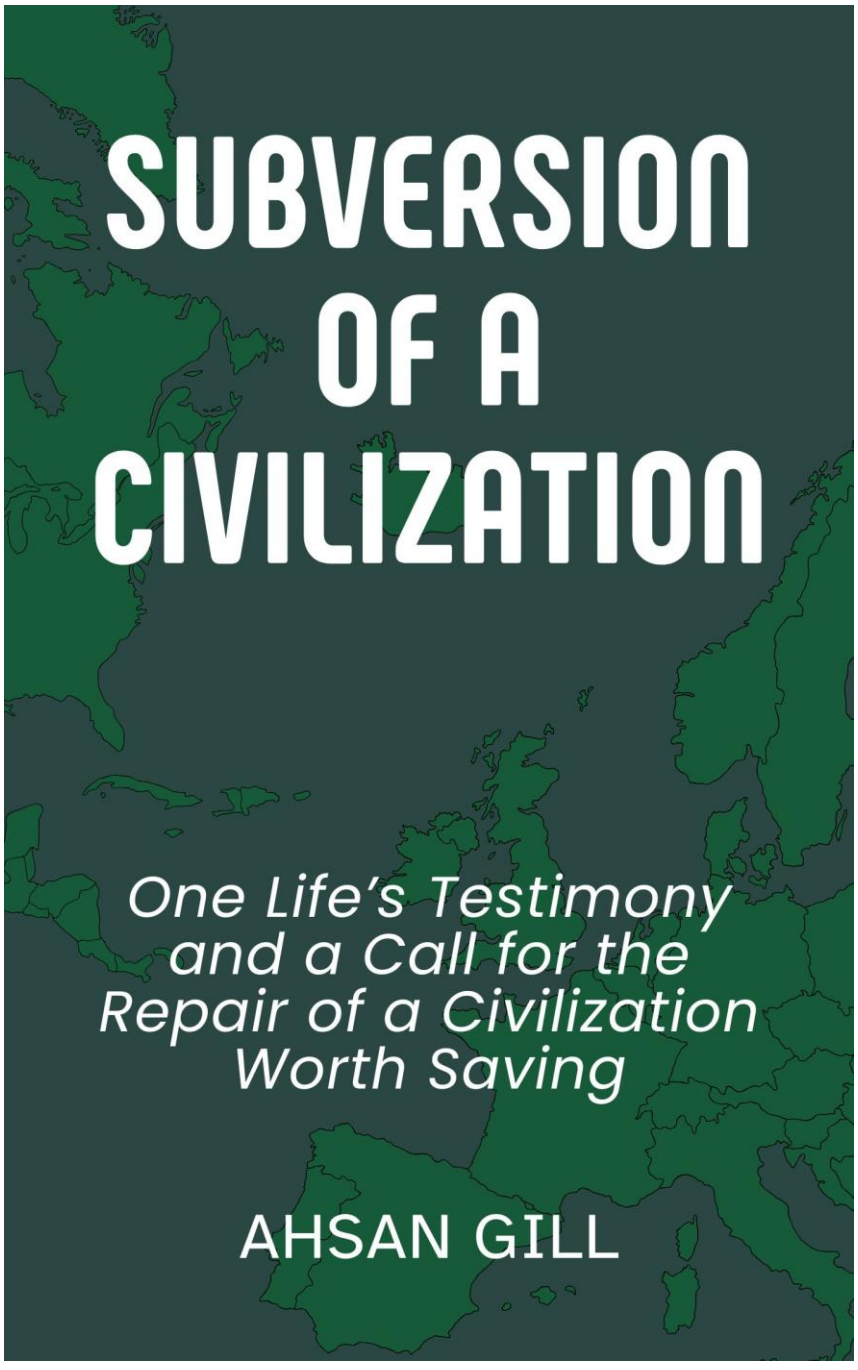
SUBVERSION OF A CIVILIZATION
One Life's Testimony and a Call for the Repair of a Civilization Worth Saving
AHSAN GILL

Subversion of a Civilization

One Life's Testimony and a Call for the Repair of a Civilization Worth Saving

AHSAN GILL

Copyright

© 2025–2026 Ahsan Gill

All rights reserved.

The author grants permission for this book to be **freely shared and redistributed** in full, in any format, for non-commercial purposes, provided the content is not altered and proper attribution is maintained.

DISCLAIMER

This book reflects my personal testimony, research, and interpretation. With the exception of direct personal experiences, I do not claim to possess a complete or definitive account of all matters discussed. Rather, across years of observation and study, I have identified recurring patterns that, in my judgment, warrant careful examination. I present these as working hypotheses and invite readers to investigate them critically and independently.

This work is not an exercise in naming or condemning private individuals or entire peoples. Where I describe patterns, behaviours, institutions, or systems, my purpose is to understand causes, identify failures, and explore constructive paths toward resolution and repair. When specific events or actors are referenced, they are discussed solely to illustrate broader patterns.

Every effort has been made to present information accurately and in good faith, using sources and reasoning available to the public. The author accepts no responsibility for misinterpretations arising from readings taken out of context.

Table of Contents

Prologue 10

Short Roadmap 13

A Note on Method and Scope 15

How This Book Reaches Its Conclusions 17

Chapter 1 The Three Layers of Persecution: An Overview 22

1st Layer of Persecution: 23

2nd Layer of Persecution: 32

3rd Layer of Persecution: 37

Chapter 2 Patterns of Organized Sabotage Against Western Civilization 42

Western Contributions to the World: Science and Technology .. 43

Ancient and Medieval Scientific Contributions: West and East Compared 45

Modern Science and Technology: Comparative Contributions of West and East 49

Exercise: Tracing the Technology Tree 55

Technology Proliferation and Large-Scale Economic Extraction 60

History of Safeguarding Technology Compared with Contemporary Landscape 62

Counterarguments 63

Case Studies 71

A World Without Western Contributions to Science and Technology 87

Conclusion 91

Non-Technological Contributions of Western Civilization to the World 93

Humanities, Social Sciences, and other Non-STEM Fields 95

European and Western History and Culture 99
Law & Democracy 101
Military, Bureaucracy, Civil Services 103
Women's Rights and Women's Contributions to Western Society 104
Championing Human Rights Across the World 105
Animal Rights 107
The All-Encompassing Subversion 110
Demographic Subversion 114
The Entrenched Nature of the Squandering of Western Wealth and Resources 142
Artificial Wars 144
The Quiet but Visible Attempts at the Systemic Erosion of Western Existence 148
The Eventual Reversal of Harm 149
Chapter 3 The Machinery of Malice: How Highly Organized Psychopathy and Malignant Narcissism Can Shape Civilizational Harm 151
Environmental Preconditions for Organised and Sustained Large-Scale Malignant Harm 154
Civilizational Harm as a Predictable Emergent Property of Malignant Disorders 155
Global Harm Born from Careless Fantasies 166
How Disordered Minds Operate in a Different Moral Reality 167
A Contradiction at Play 171
Misinterpreted as Genius, Fuelled by Malignant Disorders ... 172
A Possible Monetary Ecosystem 174
A Realistic Possibility for Peace and Course Correction 178

Childhood Angle of Malignant Personality Disorders 184
Common Traits of NPD 188
Historical Cycles of Tyranny 196
Malignant Narcissistic or Psychopathic Situations and Threats 201
The Hypothetical Bird's-Eye View — From the Mind of a Subversive Individual 204
Contrasting the Subversive Apparatus with Western Civilization 206
Chapter 4 Reversing the Subversion: Paths to Recovery 210
I. Cognitive and Cultural Foundations 211
The Essential Mindset Pivot 211
Independent Think Tanks and Research Institutions for Civilizational Defence 213
Defending Free Speech as the First Line of Defence 215
Recognising Honest Leaders as Vital Assets 217
Disregarding Relentless Replacement Indoctrination 219
Promotion of Psychological Literacy 220
Understanding Misplaced Compassion 221
II. Civilizational Defence 223
Civilization-Wide Defence Against Subversion 223
Unifying Western International Relations 227
Limited Accountability and Forgiveness for the Subversive Actors 228
Identifying and Exposing the Patterns of Subversion, Hostility, and Atrocities 235
Monitoring the Malicious 237
Enforcing Gatekeeping of Technology and Knowledge 238
Restoring Institutional Integrity 241

Economic Independence and Resilience 242
Safeguarding Corporations and Other Large Non-State Actors from Coercion and Capture 243
III. Demographic, Social, and Human Continuity 244
Addressing and Reversing Declining Birth Rates 245
The Preservation of Natural Food Systems 250
Complete Reversal of Decades-Old Unnatural Immigration and Demographic Dynamics 252
An Ecosystem of Support for Victims 256
IV. Addressing Strategic Asymmetry 257
Ending the Systemic Squandering of Western Wealth and Resources 257
Wrapping Up Teaching Foreign Talent in Western Universities 259
Wrapping Up Global "Humanitarian Aid," and "International Development" Initiatives 260
V. Strategic Posture 262
A Measured, Peaceful, and Focused Long-Term Approach 263
Formation of Strict Future Boundaries 264
3rd Layer of Persecution Revisited 266
Time of Exile in Africa 266
Sabotage of Every Aspect of Personal Life in the UK 271
Patterns of Intimidation and Unease 276
Inhumane and Degrading Treatment 280
Sabotage of Refuge 282
A Life at Stake 296
The Possible Partial Surrender and Compromise of Institutional Autonomy 303
Epilogue 312

References 314

Prologue

Even in deeply oppressed societies, many "proscribed thoughts" can be held, spoken, or quietly tolerated. When millions speak out against injustice, even the harshest systems struggle to silence them. Visibility, too, creates protection.

But what if there are cracks? What if silencing does not occur openly, but covertly, incrementally, and without spectacle? What if an individual can be isolated and worn down for holding views that don't align with forced narratives? What if that could happen through manufactured, unnatural pretexts, and proxies so incoherent that they defy ordinary explanation?

This book explores that possibility. It examines how individual suppression can operate below the threshold of public attention, through engineered circumstances.

Many of the crises unfolding across the West today bear the same signature: pretexts that appear irrational on their face, yet persist despite exposure. The personal and the political intersect here in uncomfortable ways.

This is the story of an individual caught in such a situation for expressing deep regard for the West and its civilizational contributions, and for opposing visible harms. These views are not fringe. Hundreds of million, if not billions, across the world hold them. Many resist the same agendas, narratives, and forms of indoctrination.

There are additional reasons for his suffering: a multi-layered misfortune has shadowed his entire life.

This is the story of the author of this book. This is my story.

I could have gotten away with those views because they are popular. I could have fit right in. But I could not escape scrutiny

because I was already entangled in chaos originating from my home country. While the abuse from my family has persisted since childhood, an organized oppression has been a harsh reality for nearly a decade, executed by successive actors.

This externally-driven misfortune has unfolded in three distinct layers, each driven by different motives and expressed through different perpetrators.

The third layer involves what I have come to believe to be something hidden—one I cannot claim to know personally, yet cannot reasonably ignore given the sustained hostility and antagonism it appears to direct toward me.

The second layer stems from the Pakistani Army.

The most basic layer originates from my own dysfunctional and abusive family, with the partial exception of my mother. The Pakistani Army is linked to my family through my abusive brother, a high-ranking army officer holding the rank of Lieutenant Colonel.

For reasons explained later in this book, the third layer appears to intersect with the Pakistani Army in ways that are difficult to dismiss.

The sequence of events over the past few years has been one of the most bizarre sagas imaginable. During the initial months or years of exposure to each new layer of persecution, I remained unaware of what was truly happening. Even when confronted with tangible evidence, I dismissed the implications as impossible. It was only through repetition, persistence, and accumulated experience, particularly with the second and third layers, that these realities became impossible to ignore.

In light of the patterns examined throughout this book, I am compelled, however reluctantly, to conclude that the possibility of a

subversive apparatus or entity operating globally warrants serious consideration.

I will explore the possible reasons this apparatus, the structure behind the third layer, may have come to regard me as hostile, as well as the unmistakable signs that point toward that conclusion. The efforts aimed at harming me have been direct, indirect, consistent, and malign. These will be examined in detail in later chapters.

I will not stop thinking, nor will I stop expressing views grounded in respect for the West and recognition of the harms directed against it. The deliberate and covert damage inflicted upon Western civilization over decades, even centuries, occupies more space in this book than my personal story.

One thing I will not do, however, is direct blame toward innocent individuals or groups. I will not condone negativity, nor will I take part in the scapegoating of any peoples, race, or religion.

Short Roadmap

This book is structured in four phases. Each phase corresponds primarily to one major chapter but may recur thematically.

The first phase is personal.

I recount a sequence of experiences involving family, state institutions, and prolonged pressure that shaped my understanding of unchecked malignant behaviour. This phase is itself divided into three sequential layers of persecution. These sections are offered as testimony, and they can be read on their own as a record of lived experience.

The second phase discusses Western contributions to the world, and the organized sabotage directed against it.

Here, I explain why I admire and value Western civilization, not sentimentally, but concretely.

One section traces the West's disproportionate contribution to modern technology, science, and material progress. Another addresses its non-technological gifts. These sections establish what is at stake.

I then shift to the core of the book, examining in detail the patterns of sabotage and harm directed against Western nations.

The third phase examines the psychological underpinnings of likely deliberately organized harm operating at civilizational scale.

In this phase, drawing from my experience of prolonged personal exposure to individuals with malignant disorders, I explore how malignant behaviour can scale into profoundly wide global damage when amplified by rare and highly specific environmental conditions.

The fourth phase is constructive.

Having outlined both lived experience and observed patterns, I turn to the question of response: what kinds of institutions, norms, safeguards, and ethical boundaries might reverse the damages and help prevent similar failures in the future.

NOTE: The next two brief sections are intentionally academic in tone and may feel dense for some readers, particularly at this early stage. While they serve an important foundational purpose, they are not essential reading this early.

Readers may wish to skim or skip these sections and proceed directly to **Chapter 1.** They will be asked to return to these sections later, particularly when reaching the middle portions of the book, where their relevance will become more apparent. The sections in question are *A Note on Method and Scope* and *How This Book Reaches Its Conclusions.*

A Note on Method and Scope

This book combines three distinct modes of inquiry.

First, portions of this book are grounded in **direct personal experience.** These sections describe events I personally witnessed or endured, including family dynamics, institutional encounters, and prolonged periods of psychological and social pressure. Where I write in this mode, I limit myself to what I directly experienced or what was communicated to me at the time.

Second, the book draws on **publicly accessible material,** including historical accounts, journalistic investigations, scholarly work, policy discussions, widely reported events, and other sources of information. This material is treated as provisional and contestable, as all public knowledge is. My aim is not to provide an exhaustive academic survey, but to situate personal experience, observations, and interpretation within patterns already visible in the public record.

Third, the book engages in **interpretive analysis**. In these instances, I move from description to inference, asking what interpretations may plausibly explain recurring forms of harmful outcomes that resist simpler explanations. Where I do this, I am explicit that I am reasoning from patterns rather than presenting proof. I distinguish between what I know, what I can document, and what I infer.

FOOTNOTE CITATIONS: All publicly accessible material is cited throughout this book in the footnotes of the relevant pages. Wherever authoritative sources, expert analyses, or external references for documented public incidents are warranted, full citations are provided.

For consistency with standard citation practice, URLs in the footnotes end with a full stop. When opening or copying a link, readers should simply omit the trailing full stop.

How This Book Reaches Its Conclusions

This section builds on the methodological distinctions outlined in the preceding note. Its purpose is narrower and more specific: to clarify when and why interpretive inference becomes analytically justified, how it is constrained, and what standards must be met before conclusions concerning intent are considered.

Several claims examined in this book concern sustained harm, coordinated outcomes, and resistance to correction, rather than random failures or discrete errors. It is under these conditions, and only under these conditions, that inference moves beyond description toward explanation.

This framework is offered to make explicit where inference begins, how it is escalated, and what criteria must be satisfied before intent is provisionally inferred.

Why Pattern Persistence Matters:

I do not infer intent from singular events. It is considered only when patterns exhibit the following characteristics simultaneously, structurally, and stubbornly:

I. Persistence and Directionality of Harm

- Harm persists and intensifies across decades or generations despite leadership changes, reforms, or stated corrections
- Escalation continues even after reputational, electoral, economic, or strategic self-harm becomes undeniable
- Errors consistently occur in one direction rather than randomly
- Outcomes remain fixed even as justifying narratives change

II. Cross-Domain and Cross-System Convergence

- Similar patterns of dysfunction replicate across almost all Western nations situated in different continents despite differing political systems, cultures, and geography
- Patterns of self-damage or forced ideologies and narratives manifest simultaneously across unrelated sectors such as law, culture, economy, education, media, technology, agriculture, and demography
- Failures concentrate on core civilizational pillars such as demographics, sovereignty, cultural continuity, and economic self-sufficiency
- Nominally independent institutions converge toward the same destructive equilibrium rather than counterbalancing one another

III. Incentive and Outcome Asymmetry

- Outcomes consistently benefit external, self-sabotaging, or adversarial interests while disadvantaging the host civilization
- Long-term costs to the populations are casually or forcefully overlooked or ignored, while short-term, illogical, or symbolic gains are spotlighted
- Policies remain irrational even when their long-term consequences are publicly known, forecasted, and repeatedly warned against by experts and citizens

IV. Institutional and Corrective Failure

- Safeguards exist on paper but fail uniformly in practice
- Oversight mechanisms reproduce the same outcomes as the original decision-makers
- Affected individuals or populations are denied meaningful redress despite evidence and proof

V. Narrative Control and Suppression

- Protective mechanisms activate aggressively against dissent or exposure while remaining dormant in response to evident harm
- Systems respond more forcefully to challenges against narratives than to challenges against national interests
- Moral language, legal principles, and stated values are deployed selectively or performatively rather than consistently

When these conditions occur sporadically, benign explanations remain plausible. When they occur structurally, repeatedly, and across domains, the presumption of benign causation ceases to be analytically defensible.

If genuine error were the primary cause, one would expect variation, correction, or acknowledgement over time. When none of these occur, and the same set of harmful policies reproduce across contexts, inference of intent becomes the more parsimonious explanation.

NOTE: The characteristics of harmful patterns listed above are intended as a diagnostic framework and are neither exhaustive nor fully representative of all patterns analysed throughout the book.

Inference of Intent as a Last Resort:

This book does not like the assumption of coordinated harm and malice. Many of the personal or societal situations described were initially interpreted by me as coincidence, misunderstanding, incompetence, or misfortune. Only after years of repetition, escalation, and failed corrective attempts did those explanations become untenable.

The inference of intent arises through abductive reasoning, often described as inference to the most plausible explanation. When multiple explanations are possible, the one that best accounts for the

full set of observed facts, without requiring implausible levels of coincidence or systemic dysfunction, is provisionally adopted.

This form of reasoning is commonly used in investigative journalism, intelligence analysis, and legal assessments of intent. It does not require access to private communications or explicit coordination documents.

Scope and Restraint:

This framework does not claim omniscience. It does not name hidden actors where evidence is unavailable. It does not require the reader to accept a single unified explanation in order to engage with the material.

Where I refer to a "subversive apparatus", "machinery," or "entity," the terms are used as conceptual placeholders for coordinated forces inferred from patterns of action and outcome, not as a claim of personal knowledge of identities or structures. It is employed for analytical consistency, not sensationalism.

What Would Falsify My Conclusions:

Evidence of genuine correction, transparency, accountability, or sustained reversal of the described patterns would significantly weaken claims of coordinated action. Likewise, credible alternative explanations that account for persistence, consistency, and resistance to correction would merit serious reconsideration.

This book remains open to such evidence. Its conclusions are firm, but not dogmatic.

An Invitation to the Reader:

Nothing in the chapters that follow requires blind acceptance. Readers are invited to trace similar patterns independently, apply the same standards of inference elsewhere, and draw their own conclusions.

If the reasoning presented here is rejected, it should be rejected on analytical grounds, not by dismissing lived experience, documented patterns, or the legitimacy of inference itself.

Chapter 1

The Three Layers of Persecution: An Overview

As noted in the prologue, an unfortunate series of circumstances has repeatedly drawn me into various kinds of dysfunctional dynamics. As many survivors will attest, it is common for people from dysfunctional families to find themselves in similarly unhealthy situations, relationships, and friendships later in life. Yet in my case, this pattern has been amplified to an extreme degree, almost as if on steroids.

1st Layer of Persecution:

Evidentiary status of personal claims in this section:
Direct personal experience: ●

Before delving into the details, I want to make one thing clear: I am not someone who takes pleasure in speaking negatively about others, even when the abuse is undeniable. For most of my life, I had virtually no boundaries at all. Only in the past year or two have I begun to develop a healthier understanding of when to speak up and when to remain silent. I have always disliked revisiting past experiences. I have never been the type to air dirty laundry or betray anyone by exposing them unnecessarily. That simply is not who I am.

However, when the abuse escalated to the point where I had to seek assistance from the police, silence was no longer an option. For the sake of context, and for the sake of truth, it has become equally necessary to include those details here in this book.

Two members of my family, my elder brothers, each eight to ten years older than me, were especially malicious and obsessively fixated on me throughout my childhood, teenage years, and much of my adulthood. My eldest brother, in particular, was malignant, cruel, and vindictive, both in overt and covert ways. The combination of an enabling father, a compliant and gullible mother, my brother's deep

insecurities (at least prior to the late 2010s), my own no-nonsense attitude and academic excellence, and his various one-sided rivalries against me all contributed to escalating abuse. I lived under that shadow for almost two decades.

Even the smallest sign of protest—a hint of annoyance or disregard for his behaviour—was often met with physical violence when I was a child. I remember him saying: *"How is the rest of the world going to respect us if he won't respect us?"* By "us," he meant himself and my middle brother.

I rarely comment on people personally, even my abusers, but this particular detail is crucial to understanding why he became so sadistic. At his core, he was profoundly insecure, constantly ridiculed by others and painfully aware of his perceived shortfalls. By the mid to late 2000s, he had grown megalomaniacal and utterly pathological, despite being openly mocked by colleagues and acquaintances for the delusional and absurd things he often said.

In contrast, I was excelling in my studies and generally well-liked. That contrast made me—his defenceless younger brother, a child—an easy target. His obsession with one-sided competitions began within the family and only intensified as he continued to fail in some of his numerous attempts to outdo me.

As stated, he was constantly physically and verbally abusive, and obsessively controlling. He sabotaged nearly every aspect of my life, always going unpunished, whether the abuse was overt or covert, thanks to an enabling father and mother. They never seemed to have a problem with even the most severe forms of child abuse, except on rare occasions when my mother intervened after witnessing physical violence firsthand. Verbal bullying, psychological torment, and covert abuse were all tolerated without question.

The violence sometimes accompanied unwarranted hate, even when I was a child. In one instance, after a brother slapped me, my nose began to bleed. When a neighbour remarked that I was just a child, he replied, "You don't know this son of a b*tch." This was sometime before 2004, when I was still under ten. I remember this incident not because it was unusual, but because it captured something I could not understand. I had done nothing to earn that hatred, and if anything, I was more loyal to my family than most children of my age.

My middle brother, too, struggled with hate and deep envy. Although not physically violent on his own, he would seize any opportunity to join in when my eldest brother attacked me. He was, however, consistently verbally abusive. He was also the one primarily responsible for the nail attacks on my face, which I will describe later. I will also soon explain why I remained trapped in this family well into adulthood due to societal and cultural norms in the country.

My clothing choices were tightly controlled; my brothers or less strictly my mother decided what I was allowed to wear. If any of those clothes began to look better on me than my brothers had anticipated, they would run blades through the fabric or tear them apart. My favourite clothes, especially my jeans and shirts, would mysteriously go missing, end up ruined, or be slashed in several places to render them unwearable.

Throughout my childhood and teenage years, I was not allowed to eat freely. My elder brother frequently fought with my mother about my meals. As a result, I was severely underweight. He would mock my appearance, calling me ugly or degrading names, comment on my "ugly" clothes, often when we visited others or when we had guests, deliberately humiliating me to make me less social and withdrawn.

Around 2011, when I was about eighteen, I began to recover slightly, at least enough to escape malnourishment. Yet my brother's obsession with my eating habits never subsided. Even as recently as 2023, during my brief six-month stay in Pakistan—those six months of nightmare—he remained fixated on my food. Now in his forties, he still had something to say every time I ate: *"Don't eat too fast, eat small chunks; you make us look like backward people when you eat."* Throughout much of my life, he used to glance sideways at me as he himself ate, watching to ensure I didn't eat fast—because eating fast meant eating more, and eating more meant I might start to look healthy, which for him somehow meant losing one of his one-sided competitions. He remained underweight for much of his adult life and expected the same of me. He also hated what came after I began to look better: I became more social, confident, made friends, and no longer remained isolated, all things he despised.

Had nail attacks on my face which left visible scars—tiny scars that begin just beneath my eyes. One brother would grab my feet, the other would grab my hands, and together they would beat me with shoes, sandals, punches, slaps, and would sometimes scratch my face with their nails until it bled. Once, my entire face, from under my eyes downward, was covered in blood and torn flesh.

Another daily form of abuse revolved around how I was required to address my brothers and father in every conversation. Normally, one might call a sibling by name or simply say "hey." But not in my case. I had to address my brothers as "X bhai" or "Y bhai" every single time I spoke to them (X and Y being the placeholders for their names as I don't want to include their names in the book). I could not complete a sentence without adding that bhai title, which roughly translates to "elder brother" in our family context. While the term bhai can be used as a form of respect in everyday speech in South

Asia—much like "brother"—in our family it was enforced to an excruciating degree.

I could not take their phone calls in front of others, because people would notice, make fun of me, or express concern after hearing me repeat "X bhai" or "Y bhai" twenty times in a two-minute call. The same was true for my father: I was required to say *Abbu Ji*—roughly meaning "Father Sir"—every single time I addressed him. Any instance where I failed to do so, almost without exception, would unleash verbal or sometimes even physical violence. Saying anything else, anything normal, even just their names or a casual sentence without those honorifics, was treated as disrespect and was rarely overlooked.

I could not simply say, "I'm going to the shop." It always had to be, "X bhai, I'm going to the shop," or "Abbu Ji, I'm going to the shop." It didn't matter if I had already used those titles in the previous sentence, I was still expected to repeat them. This ritual became especially painful after I had lost all respect for them, following years of daily abuse by the late 2000s.

Additionally, the tone of my voice was often scrutinized for any perceived hint of disrespect. Even when I used the required honorifics, if nothing else worked—if they had done something abusive and I dared to protest—they would simply decide that my tone was not polite enough. My mother and father would side with them without hesitation.

Their tone, in contrast, was allowed to be disrespectful, loud, and verbally abusive, simply because they were the elders. Everyone in my family, including my father and even my mother, agreed on this rule. All it took was for my brothers to tell my parents that my tone was wrong, and they would immediately turn against me, regardless of

what I was actually saying, even when I was protesting against the most malicious acts.

My father was also a huge fan of daily instability in the house, and would needle and provoke until a reaction came just so that he could yell, shout, and involve my brothers. If there was no immediate trigger, he created one, dredging up grievances from years past or inventing new ones. Scarcely a day passed without an episode.

These, among many more, were a daily pattern throughout the first twenty-three years of my life whenever I was at home. These experiences left me frustrated, emotionally stifled, and chronically anxious, feelings that lingered long after I had distanced myself from this family. I continue to struggle with the lasting effects of my family experiences, though I now recognize these patterns and actively work on improving my emotional regulation. I believe I may have Complex Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder (CPTSD), as emotional regulation difficulties are common among people who grew up as scapegoat children in abusive and dysfunctional families.

Almost every exam I took in Pakistan was sabotaged in some way. My brothers would deliberately distract me with new "projects" just before exams to divert my focus. On one occasion, they involved me in a pointless venture that caused me to miss nearly four months of classes right before my annual board exams. Even so, I still achieved 87% overall in my high school degree, scoring above 95% in biology, physics, chemistry, and mathematics each. My midterm results had been even higher, and that seemed to upset them. When the same pattern reappeared before my next set of exams, I recognized it for what it was and refused to fall for it again. After my teenage years, my education began to suffer due to never-ending hurdles, stress, abuse, and distractions.

My early education was also repeatedly disrupted and manipulated. I was forced to skip multiple foundational school years, removed from school for extended periods without much of a reason despite nominal school fees, and placed arbitrarily into higher grades without continuity. It was my brothers who persuaded my parents to make these decisions. My father somewhat valued education, but only for social prestige.

My elder brother also sabotaged my friendships. He would meet my friends behind my back and they would eventually end up turning against me. In third grade, I had a best friend—a friendship he deliberately destroyed.

My elder brother's obsession with my life extended to even my online presence. He demanded the passwords to my social media accounts, such as Facebook, starting from mid-teenage years and well into my adulthood, to make sure I wasn't talking to girls. He and my middle brother also withheld my national ID card as soon as it was issued. I had to fight to get it back. My middle brother insisted on keeping the original indefinitely and offered to send me a laminated colour photocopy instead. This was far from the only time they crossed such lines.

You know the saying we figuratively use when we're upset: "Man, I feel like hitting my head on a wall." My father often said things like that, and he occasionally did it literally. Imagine a man, sixty years old, hugging a wall during an argument and slowly, so as not to hurt himself, banging his head against it. That's what my father literally did as recently as 2023, dramatically, cursing, genuinely upset, and completely serious while doing it.

My malignant elder brother, who is an officer in the Pakistani Army by the way, has been close friends for over a decade and a half with a high-ranking officer in the Punjab Police. This made things far

worse for me, as he was well-connected even in the late 2000s. In Pakistan, being "connected" means almost being above the law. Along with recurring threats of withholding funds for my education and living expenses, these connections ensured my compliance during my late teenage and early adult years. Before that, physical abuse was their primary method of control.

And so, I was stuck in this family. There are stories, even in developed countries, of individuals who inflict long-term abuse on their family members. I was in that situation directly for the first twenty-three years of my life, except in a country where there are no meaningful child protection services.

In Pakistan, no one seeks government help for child abuse; it is extremely rare. When it does happen, it often makes things worse for the child and sets them up for further abuse. That was not an option for me. The only thing that made life just bearable was my mother, who would usually intervene only in cases of physical abuse when it occurred in her presence.

Because of the social and cultural conditions in Pakistan, if you don't have your own job, you depend entirely on your family members, your father or elder brothers. Perhaps for this very reason, my eldest brother sabotaged everything I tried to do. For several years, my brother actively tried to force me into a dynamic that resembled slavery. By that, I mean literal servitude. He refused to let me work, sabotaged every opportunity I found, and ensured that I remained financially dependent, even for something as small as £5. His goal was to keep me as a permanent servant, and to maintain absolute control and continue the abuse as before. My middle brother once told me outright that I was their slave because they had funded my education.

As dysfunctional as my father was, he had one redeeming trait: he valued education for the social prestige it gave him. In an otherwise mostly illiterate social circle in our village, the education of his children allowed him to boast of superiority. That vanity, ironically, ensured that I received an education, despite the constant hurdles and interference from my brothers.

I remained heavily isolated for much of my life because that is what I had been obsessively subjected and conditioned to since childhood. For the vast majority of my life, I have had no one but myself in the face of abuse.

I believe my mother did not have sadistic tendencies, and perhaps my father didn't either. He was extremely abusive, fully supportive and enabler of my abusive brothers, craved emotional pain constantly, and was unbearably loud most of the time, but maybe not physically sadistic in nature. My brothers, however, most certainly were. I think my mother had been conditioned to believe that verbal and emotional abuse were warranted, since in her mind, younger family members were simply expected to tolerate everything out of respect for their elders. However, her own dysfunction which I have not detailed in this book, and her regular excuses for my brothers' abusive behaviours made the family situation impossible for me. She did support me on a few vital matters, just like my father supported my education.

There was also proxy abuse orchestrated by my elder brother, and much more I could reveal about the direct abuse I suffered at the hands of my family and brothers. This account is meant only as an overview of what could itself be a full memoir of abuse.

I distanced myself from my family in late 2016, after a particularly sinister scheme my malignant brother had tried to carry out. I stopped

visiting my home and my brothers' homes altogether. In 2018, I left Pakistan entirely and lived in Africa for the next five years.

That exile to Africa connects directly to the second layer of persecution.

2nd Layer of Persecution:

Evidentiary status of personal claims in this section:
Direct personal experience: ●
Indirect publicly documented cases: ●
Pattern-based inference: ●
External corroboration: ○ *(Currently unavailable)*

As for the second layer of persecution—how I ended up being targeted by the Pakistani Army—it stemmed from my eldest brother's position as an officer in the military. He was a Major at the time, now a Lieutenant Colonel. I had written a complaint to his Commanding Officer regarding a sinister attempted plan of his. For the sake of maintaining focus on the broader purpose of this book, I will not describe that incident here. My letter to his Commanding Officer was straightforward and direct, perhaps too direct, and it was met with unfriendliness.

At the time, I was studying as a civilian at a Pakistani Army's university, driven by my long-standing passion for history, politics, and international relations. I was also working as an intern at one of their research institutes, a think tank run by the Army.

My brother, obsessive as ever, had a habit of interfering in my life wherever I went, at hostels, workplaces, or even social gatherings. He often found a way to make things difficult. This time, however, my workplace was part of his own organization, and they seemed all

too willing to join in. Things escalated before I even realized what was happening.

Looking back, I will simply say this: there is a distinct kind of nastiness that manifests in people when they hold power in Pakistan. More than one senior officer had an open problem with me—particularly when it came to my interactions with women, most notably a Brigadier and a Major General. They made little effort to hide it. Some would summon me to their offices only to send me away rudely without allowing me to enter. Captains and Majors would be nasty and clingy couple of times a day just coming back and forth with new rude comments.

It wasn't long before I met General Qamar Javed Bajwa, the Army Chief himself. For me, it was an honour, the first time I had ever met a serving Army Chief, and I treated him with courtesy and respect. He, however, responded with visible annoyance, making faces I didn't fully understand at the time.

I know it sounds far-fetched to think an Army Chief would pay any mind to some nobody intern. Maybe it meant something. Maybe nothing. What makes me pause, however, is what continued unfolding long into the future.

In Pakistan, men and women have traditionally been segregated, and friendships between them remain heavily stigmatized. Merely talking to women can attract hostility, sometimes covert, sometimes openly expressed. Although this taboo has eased slightly in recent decades, it remains deeply ingrained. This, too, was a constant point of contention with my brothers.

One instance stands out vividly. On a Valentine's Day, my eldest brother fractured his leg the next morning during an Army exercise because he had barely slept the night before, convinced that I had spoken to a woman on the phone that evening. He was furious that

he couldn't stop me; I was in another city. He blamed me for that leg injury for around half a decade. That same night, my middle brother cut the cord of my ethernet internet in rage.

In Pakistan, most men spend their entire lives without regular interaction with women outside their families or marriage. When the Pakistani Army is involved, this hostility is amplified, as they operate with unchecked power and without accountability. Even minor grievances can escalate into full-blown harassment. Looking back, I believe that my letter to my brother's Commanding Officer, particularly the blunt, unfiltered tone I used, combined with my presence at the Army's think tank and the simple fact that women in that environment responded to me politely or warmly, likely triggered their hostility. What may have begun as subtle loathing soon grew into persecution.

I remain friends on social media with some women who attended a month-long workshop organized by that institution, where I was part of the organizing team as an intern. As said, a certain Major General had a particular problem with me for speaking with pretty female participants during that event. All across the world, people from our region are known for this kind of behaviour unfortunately, but the Army from that region with unlimited power in the mix? You get the point. The vast majority of officers in that organization displayed an unhealthy obsession when it came to women.

Ironically, the same Army Chief who had once met me with visible annoyance was later exposed by citizen journalists for multiple scandals involving women during his tenure. He made headlines after headlines in that regard with at least 10-20 Pakistani actresses alleged to have been coerced into sleeping with him. His spy chief, a Lieutenant General, was even shot by his wife amid similar controversies involving women.

Even after I left that organization, they didn't leave me alone. I received a phone call from a Captain of Pakistan's intelligence agency, the ISI, asking about my work situation. Needless to say, no intelligence agency, least of all one as notorious as the ISI, has any legitimate reason to inquire into a private citizen's employment. Within a year of leaving that Army institution, my situation deteriorated further, to the point where I had to flee Pakistan urgently and seek refuge in Africa.

I will not share the precise details of why I had to leave or the specific threats I faced, but they were grave and life-threatening. The Army's intelligence agency appeared to be orchestrating efforts that endangered my safety and life, leaving me with no choice but to escape.

Here's some broader context on how institutions in Pakistan operate, just one of many examples. Senator Azam Swati, a senior member of former Prime Minister Imran Khan's party, was subjected to unnecessary brutality. Despite being old enough to be the father of many Brigadiers and Generals, he was beaten naked, humiliated, and faced around forty criminal reports (FIRs) simply for continuing to voice support for Imran Khan.

Furthermore, the Army's intelligence wing made a video of the Senator with his wife at a hotel and circulated it across the country[1]. This, according to Mr Swati himself, was orchestrated by the Army.

My brother is part of that same Army and may well have had a role in its persecution of me. Around that same period, nearly every

[1] Kaukab Shairani, "Crying Senator Says He's Being Blackmailed With a Secretly Filmed Video of Him and His Wife," *VICE*, November 8, 2022, https://www.vice.com/en/article/azam-swati-wife-secretly-filmed-leaked-video/.

independent journalist in Pakistan was forced to flee the country. The Army even had one journalist killed in Kenya[2].

In 2018, I left Pakistan for Africa. I lived there from 2018 to 2023 before being effectively harassed out of the continent as well. Life in Africa was far from easy. Pakistani passport is among the weakest in the world, and for most of my five years in exile, I survived on short-term visas, constant extensions, and stressful makeshift work permits. I barely scraped by, sustaining myself through online work.

There were patterns of consistent domestic disturbances across several rented houses in Rwanda and there may have been sabotage of my social life during that time as well. I will go into those details later on. There were also multiple confirmed incidents of stalking by Pakistani nationals while I was in Africa.

Note: I have long held the view that the Pakistani Army has served as one of the core stabilising pillars in an otherwise difficult national environment. Throughout its ranks, it has produced many capable and principled individuals, including people I encountered during my time at the Army's think tank, as well as former Army Chief Pervez Musharraf.

My experiences, as described in this section, do not negate that reality. Nor do they constitute a blanket judgment against the institution as a whole. I have, in fact, defended the Pakistani Army with conviction my entire life, and I continue to recognise the presence of integrity within it, even while acknowledging the patterns I have outlined here.

---

[2] Emmanuel Igunza, "Arshad Sharif: Mystery over Killing of Pakistani Journalist in Kenya," *BBC News,* October 29, 2022, https://www.bbc.co.uk/news/world-africa-63426794.

3d Layer of Persecution:

Evidentiary status of personal claims in this section:
Direct personal experience: ●
Indirect publicly documented cases: ●
Pattern-based inference: ●
External corroboration: ●○ *(Pending; discussed later in the book)*

For a time, I could have argued that the Pakistani Army alone was responsible for what happened, even across borders, in unsafe countries of East Africa. That explanation seemed sufficient then.

But my misfortune did not end in Africa. It followed me everywhere, even into countries widely regarded as safe, where such patterns would ordinarily stop immediately.

I believe it was during my time in Africa that I might have first come under the radar of the subversive global apparatus I mentioned earlier, an entity whose fixation on me has since defined my life, especially since arriving in the UK in 2024. At first, it might have been mild or indirect attention, but it has since become an undeniable reality. I suspect that Pakistan's intelligence agency, the ISI, may have sought assistance from other intelligence agencies while I was in Africa. It's entirely plausible that the ISI framed me, perhaps as a spy, among other things.

At multiple points, my brother openly accused me of being an Indian spy. His logic was crude. I had been in Africa for several years, and in his mind that fact alone meant I must have been involved in something odd. My past remarks were selectively recalled and twisted to reinforce that conclusion. For him, Africa was not a place for a Pakistani without a formal job for such a prolonged time, even though I'm certain he knew the reasons why I had fled to Africa. Despite having cut off contact with him in 2016, I was later forced to

re-engage due to unavoidable family and property matters that required coordination with my parents.

Circling back, in recent years there have been numerous reports alleging close cooperation between the ISI and certain Western intelligence agencies—ties dating back to the 1970s, with the CIA reportedly funding it with hundreds of millions of dollars post-2000[3]. When I left Pakistan in 2018, the Afghan War was still ongoing, and the United States, particularly the CIA, maintained a long-standing dependency on Pakistan's ISI due to Pakistan's strategic location at the time. A little later, Imran Khan, Pakistan's former Prime Minister, publicly alleged that the Pakistani Army had orchestrated his government's overthrow at the behest of the Biden Administration[4]. According to widely circulated reports and Imran Khan himself, a senior official in the Biden Administration had sent a letter to Pakistan's Ambassador in Washington expressing concerns if Khan remained in power. These are not my personal claims, they are publicly available reports discussed across Pakistani and international media. I am not taking sides; I merely cite the public record.

Given that backdrop, it is plausible that the Pakistani Army and ISI were working closely with U.S. intelligence agencies during my time of exile in Africa. Given that the same power structure in Pakistan remains in place today, their relationship with these networks likely continues, whether through the CIA or now with other globalist structures.

---

[3] Greg Miller, "CIA Pays for Support in Pakistan: It Has Spent Millions Funding the ISI Spy Agency, despite Fears of Corruption. But Some Say It Is Worth It.," *Los Angeles Times*, November 15, 2009, https://www.latimes.com/archives/la-xpm-2009-nov-15-fg-cia-pakistan15-story.html.

[4] Asif Shahzad, "Pakistan Rejects Ousted PM Khan's Accusation That U.S. Conspired to Topple Him," *Reuters*, April 22, 2022, https://www.reuters.com/world/asia-pacific/pakistan-rejects-ousted-pm-khans-accusation-that-us-conspired-topple-him-2022-04-22/.

In 2024, reports emerged claiming that the Pakistani ISI and CIA, backed by powerful international financiers, were involved in the removal of Bangladesh's government[5]. Around the same period, India's ruling party publicly accused the Biden Administration[6] and other "globalist" entities, including George Soros[7], of trying to overthrow their democratically elected government, citing Mr. Soros's investment of billions of dollars, his NGO interferences, and his multiple statements attacking India's sitting government and its internal affairs[8]. Hungarian sitting Prime Minister has also accused Mr. Soros for trying to push immigrants into Europe[9].

That said, I respect Joe Biden as an individual. While I do not agree with many of his policies in office, I regard him as a decent person.

Coming back to South Asia, this makes three of the seven countries in my region alone, namely Pakistan, Bangladesh, and India, that have directly accused such networks of interference in just the past few years.

---

[5] Web Desk, "Did US Plot Sheikh Hasina's Ouster? What Bangladesh Ex-PM Said in Her Undelivered Speech," *The Week,* August 11, 2024, https://www.theweek.in/news/world/2024/08/11/did-us-plot-sheikh-hasinas-ouster-what-bangladesh-ex-pm-said-in-her-undelivered-speech.html.

[6] Shubhajit Roy, "Disappointing: US Responds to BJP's Allegation of Backing Agenda to Destabilise India," *The Indian Express,* December 8, 2024, https://indianexpress.com/article/india/us-embassy-bjp-deep-state-accusations-disappointing-9712127/.

[7] Prabhu Chawla, "Not Breaking India Is Soros's Sorrow," *The New Indian Express,* December 14, 2024, https://www.newindianexpress.com/opinion/columns/pc/2024/Dec/14/not-breaking-india-is-soross-sorrow.

[8] Yashraj Sharma, "How George Soros Became 'Enemy Number 1' for India's Modi," *Al Jazeera,* December 26, 2024, https://www.aljazeera.com/news/2024/12/26/how-george-soros-became-enemy-number-1-for-indias-modi.

[9] Ibid.

If there is any truth to those reports, particularly regarding the Pakistani Army's deep-seated globalist ties, it only strengthens my belief that these alliances and covert networks may have eventually placed me on the radar of this machinery. And that forms the third layer of persecution that I continue to face.

The magnitude of this all-encompassing and obsessively comprehensive third layer of persecution dwarfs everything I endured before, even the nightmare of my abusive family and the hostility of the Pakistani Army. I will share examples, with details, toward the end of this book. With family, you can leave the city or even the country and, eventually, find freedom. With the Army, relocating to a safe nation like the UK might have been enough.

This third layer is different. When harm appears to originate from a hidden force operating beyond national boundaries, escape becomes far less certain. Once such a force fixates on an individual, safety becomes increasingly difficult. I cannot claim personal knowledge of its structure or membership, but the patterns I have observed suggest something larger and more coordinated than any single institution. My concern about potential harm does not arise from imagination or paranoia, but from sustained, repeated experiences that have followed a consistent and troubling logic.

As outlined in *How This Book Reaches Its Conclusions,* I recognize that the distance between global covert activity and individual targeting is significant. I do not claim that such targeting is routine, common, or easily proven. My argument rests not on any single event, but on the persistence, continuity, and escalation of pressure across contexts where regular explanations cease to function.

I ask only that readers suspend judgment until the end of the book. My views on justice, fairness, and the malicious sabotage of Western civilization, and my willingness to express them openly

without softening them, may have placed me at odds with powerful interests. I have spoken persistently against forces that thrive on manipulation and disorder. It is possible that this has drawn a degree of hostility I did not anticipate.

A substantial body of personal evidence supports this assessment and is examined in detail near the end of the book. Readers who find this third layer of persecution ambiguous at this stage may turn directly to the section titled *3rd Layer of Persecution Revisited,* where the evidence is presented explicitly and at length.

That said, the material is best understood in sequence. Reading the book in its natural progression provides the context necessary to fully grasp the significance and coherence of what is presented later.

One consistent feature of this third layer is the apparent use of smokescreens and plausible deniability. Harm rarely seems to occur without pretexts, proxies, confusion, distraction, or misdirection.

At present, the threats I face do not originate from my family or from the Pakistani Army. They stem from this hidden apparatus.

Importantly, what has happened to me did not occur in isolation. Similar patterns appear wherever individuals speak openly against what I regard as the deliberate sabotage of Western civilization.

This is why the book must now widen its scope. To understand how an individual can be drawn into the orbit of such a force, one must understand the broader environment in which that force operates. Without that context, my testimony may appear implausible. With it, the picture becomes far clearer.

The chapters that follow may seem to shift from personal persecution to civilizational critique, but this is not a detour. It is the continuation of the same story. My experience is one thread within a larger tapestry, and to understand it, we must examine the machinery that has been operating behind the scenes.

Chapter 2

Patterns of Organized Sabotage Against Western Civilization

Before delving into what appears to be ongoing, organized sabotage of Western civilization across various domains, I will first examine, from time to time, the West's contributions in those same areas, to provide context. This will be a recurring theme throughout the following sections.

I would like to begin with technology. Though it is not often viewed as one of the serious issues afflicting the West today, it is important for me to address technology proliferation first. I will explore even more grievous injustices being committed against the West in later sections.

Western Contributions to the World: Science and Technology

Evidentiary status of claims in this section:

Direct personal observation: ●

Publicly documented: ●

Pattern-based inference: ●

External corroboration: ●

This section does not use technical language and is written to be accessible to any casual reader, even without a background in science or technology. For readers who are not particularly interested in technological subjects, everything up to the discussion of "Non-Technological Contributions of Western Civilization to the World" can be skimmed or even skipped without losing the thread of the book. Even so, this section presents points that are not only interesting but essential to understanding the broader picture. The rest of the book does not rely on dedicated technological discussions.

At the end of this section, I will discuss what may be an ongoing colossal transfer of wealth, a phenomenon that remains almost entirely unacknowledged in mainstream economic and political discourse.

I may sound like I am overstating it at first when I say that virtually every modern technology traces its origins to Western civilization, even if many things are now manufactured elsewhere. Whether you live in Asia, Americas, Africa, Europe, or anywhere else in the world, nearly everything you use or do today comes from Western innovation.

This isn't about chauvinism. It's about precision: who created what, and how knowledge actually develops. It isn't meant to discredit the significant and valuable contributions of non-Western civilizations, but rather to highlight that the scale and structure of the modern world rest disproportionately on Western gifts.

We all know that modern technology is overwhelmingly Western, but is it really that close to 100%? Together, we'll explore that question.

Before we move further, I would like to clarify something. When I state that nearly all modern technology originates in the West, I do not do so lightly, nor as a rhetorical flourish. This is the only claim of this magnitude made in the book, and it has been considered carefully over an extended period. It should not be read as representative of my broader method, which elsewhere relies on narrow, limited, and lean arguments.

The counterargument to my statement largely rests on two main points. First, that ancient civilizations such as China, India, and medieval Middle East made noteworthy scientific and technological contributions.

Second, that in today's world, technological progress is more globally dispersed, with significant advances taking place in countries like China, Taiwan, South Korea, India, and Japan.

Let's take a closer look at these counterarguments.

Ancient and Medieval Scientific Contributions: West and East Compared

There were impressive advances from non-Western ancient and medieval civilizations, such as acupuncture, herbal remedies, gunpowder, paper, printing, silk production, algebra, and the concept of zero. The list is finite, and some tend to emphasize it in a way that overlooks the broader picture.

While the East produced a few outstanding scientists and thinkers, the West produced a vastly large number of minds of similar or greater stature, stretching from antiquity through to the modern age.

Algebra, the concept zero[10], and advances in optics were remarkable, yet none of those civilizations continued to build upon them. They were not carried forward through continuous scientific traditions or institutional continuity. One of the many things that sets Western science apart is that its scientific achievements emerged from a long tradition of systematised inquiry. Think of ancient figures like Plato, Aristotle, Archimedes, and Ptolemy, whose work was embedded within structured schools of thought and sustained intellectual institutions.

It was the West that ultimately absorbed, refined, and expanded some of the scientific ideas that were developed in the East, alongside the vast body of ideas and innovations that originated within the West itself.

Many renowned Eastern achievements such as gunpowder, silk, and printing were primarily discoveries or crafts rather than

---

[10] Anoushka Pant, "Zero," *Encyclopedia Britannica,* July 11, 2025, https://www.britannica.com/science/zero-mathematics.

theoretical scientific contributions[11]. Ancient Chinese inventions are widely understood to have been predominantly functional rather than scientific. Nevertheless, they should be taken as scientific inventions and contributions. The credit is due for impressive discoveries that took place in ancient China. Ancient India contributed immensely to ancient mathematics and astronomy.

Some Eastern scientific developments were remarkably complex for their time, but when one compares their overall scale and enduring influence, the difference is vast: an almost uncountable number of scientific advancements of similar magnitude in the West versus perhaps a few hundred originating in the East over the same broad span of history.

Consider the example of a modern commercial jet airliner. On the surface, it is a single machine. In reality, it is the end-product of an immense, interlocking web of discoveries and innovations spanning thousands of years.

Every component in that aircraft: the engines, the avionics, the radar systems, the flight controls, the fuselage design, the navigation systems, and so on, rests on layers upon layers of scientific breakthroughs. The theories behind jet propulsion alone draw on thermodynamics, fluid dynamics, combustion chemistry, materials science, metallurgy, advanced mathematics, aerodynamics, and so on. Each of these fields required thousands, maybe easily tens of thousands, of individual discoveries and refinements.

And that is only one part of the aircraft out of hundreds, if not thousands.

The composite materials used in the wings depend on breakthroughs in polymer chemistry, crystallography, structural

---

[11] Britannica Editors, "Silk," *Encyclopedia Britannica,* July 20, 1998, https://www.britannica.com/topic/silk.

engineering, nanotechnology, and so on. The navigation systems depend on satellite physics, relativity, radio engineering, computation theory, signal processing, mathematics, and more that took centuries to mature. Even something as routine as cabin pressurisation rests on gas laws, atmospheric chemistry, mechanical engineering, and precision sensors built on quantum-era physics.

If you follow each branch back to its origins, you uncover a near-infinite lattice of scientific achievements: the discovery of the atom, the structure of the electron, the periodic table, conductors and insulators, circuit design, wave theory, algorithmic mathematics, and more. Every layer depends on another layer beneath it.

Almost all of it is Western science.

A single jet airliner flying overhead is not one invention. It is tens of thousands of inventions, maybe even hundreds of thousands, each one resting on another. It is the visible tip of a mountain of knowledge so vast that few people on earth might fully understand the full picture.

This is the point often missed when people list Eastern inventions. As impressive as they rightly are, they're comparatively modest in scale against West's scientific legacy. We are not comparing categories of the same scale. Modern technology is a cumulative structure built over centuries by tens of thousands of minds, each contributing a precise piece to an ever-expanding scientific edifice.

This is why the number of Western scientific contributions is not merely high. It is astronomical.

In the last five hundred years leading to the middle of twentieth century, however, the contributions of non-Western nations became increasingly negligible, a trend that further underscores the West's role in shaping human progress.

It is also worth noting that several scientific ideas and inventions attributed to the East were themselves translations, interpretations, or consolidations of earlier Greek sources. They provided a foundation for intellectual activity in the medieval Islamic world. The Islamic golden age did not arise in a vacuum; it was enabled by this inherited body of knowledge.

Here is a direct quote from Historian Toby Huff from one of his articles: *"What writers on the history of Arabic-Islamic science often forget or omit is the extraordinary legacy of Greek natural science and philosophy that was translated and without which it can be argued there would not have been a golden age of scientific inquiry in the Muslim world*[12]*."*

A figure like Alhazen (Ibn al-Haytham), known for his impressive contributions in optics, for example, worked within a scientific framework heavily derived from Greek and Roman knowledge.

The rich scientific and literary tradition of medieval Egypt centred in Alexandria, had previously been directly established and nurtured by Greek and Roman scholars for centuries when Egypt was a Roman province or ruled by Greek Ptolemaic dynasty. Later, Muslim Egyptian thinkers built upon that foundation, carrying some of it to Baghdad and Islamic Córdoba. Unfortunately, they sustained this tradition for a limited time during the medieval ages[13].

Historical records point to the fact that outside the medieval Islamic world, there were relatively few meaningful scientific contributions in the East, apart from those made in ancient India and ancient or medieval China, which have already been discussed.

---

[12] Toby Huff, "Civilizational Analysis and Paths Not Taken, Part II: The Great Divergence," *Comparative Civilizations Review,* Volume 76, Article 7, April 25, 2017, https://scholarsarchive.byu.edu/cgi/viewcontent.cgi?article=1998&context=ccr

[13] Ibid.

A contribution is still a contribution. Recognising the facts discussed above does not diminish the value of impressive Eastern scientific achievements. It simply places them in fair context and counters the narrative that downplays Western accomplishments. Eastern contributions still played a part in the progression of science and technology that led to the modern world.

Modern Science and Technology: Comparative Contributions of West and East

I believe I do not need to expand heavily on the Renaissance or the Industrial Revolution, because their significance is already widely understood. These were the epochs in which the foundations of the modern world were laid, and it was almost exclusively the West that carried the weight of progress during those transformative centuries[14]. Western societies continued to refine, expand, and accelerate this progress through the eighteenth, nineteenth, and twentieth centuries, creating the scientific and technological framework that defines our modern age. That historical momentum has shaped everything from industrial production to medicine, computing, and space exploration.

Let's address the second main counterargument and a common misconception about the contemporary technology. When people point to semiconductor manufacturing in Asia or other technological advances in non-Western regions, they often confuse manufacturing with creation. Manufacturing excellence doesn't equal intellectual origination. No offense intended to any nation or people, but we need to distinguish between copying, improving, and fundamental creation.

---

[14] J. Brookes Spencer, "Scientific Revolution," *Encyclopedia Britannica,* May 3, 2019, https://www.britannica.com/science/Scientific-Revolution.

Take semiconductors as an example. Yes, many are now manufactured in Asia with impressive precision and efficiency. But what are the foundational principles these manufacturers utilize? The transistor itself was invented by Bardeen, Brattain, and Shockley at Bell Labs in the United States[15]. The integrated circuit (microchip) came from Kilby and Noyce, also Americans[16]. The microprocessor emerged from Intel. The physics principles governing semiconductor behaviour—quantum mechanics, solid-state physics, electromagnetic theory—all developed in Western laboratories and universities.

A laptop isn't something you wake up one morning and decide to invent. Just like the jet airliner, it represents thousands of component technologies, each with its own complex layered development history. Semiconductors, transistors, liquid crystal displays, cooling systems, battery technology, wireless communication protocols, operating systems, programming languages, trace any of these back to their origins, and you find Western innovation almost all of the time.

In biology, Alexander Fleming discovered penicillin[17]. Watson and Crick uncovered DNA structure[18]. Darwin revolutionized our understanding of life through evolution[19]. Pasteur established germ

---

[15] "The Transistor – an Invention Ahead of Its Time," *Ericsson.Com,* accessed November 8, 2025, https://www.ericsson.com/en/about-us/history/products/other-products/the-transistor--an-invention-ahead-of-its-time.

[16] "BBC - History - Historic Figures: Kilby and Noyce (1923-2005)," accessed November 8, 2025, https://www.bbc.co.uk/history/historic_figures/kilby_and_noyce.shtml.

[17] Robert Gaynes, "The Discovery of Penicillin—New Insights After More Than 75 Years of Clinical Use - PMC," *Emerging Infectious Diseases* 23, no. 5 (n.d.), https://doi.org/10.3201/eid2305.161556.

[18] BBC Bitesize, "Discovering the Structure of DNA," *BBC Bitesize,* May 17, 2019, https://www.bbc.co.uk/bitesize/articles/z4pd382.

[19] Ibid.

theory[20]. Mendel founded genetics[21]. The list continues with Koch, Lister, Jenner, Harvey, and countless others.

The same pattern repeats for modern physics. The foundational theories that make all contemporary technology possible emerged almost entirely from Western scientists. Quantum mechanics: Max Planck, Werner Heisenberg, Erwin Schrödinger, Niels Bohr. Relativity: Einstein. Electromagnetism: Faraday, Maxwell. Thermodynamics: Carnot, Kelvin, Clausius. Atomic theory: Rutherford, Bohr, and so on[22]. I'm keeping it extremely brief but this could go on and on.

This pattern applies in every field. Modern medicine relies on Western-developed pharmaceuticals, diagnostic equipment, surgical techniques, and research methodologies. Contemporary agriculture uses Western-developed fertilizers, pesticides, genetic modification techniques, and industrial machinery[23]. Transportation systems—cars, planes, trains, ships—all operate on principles and technologies developed in Western countries. The exploration and expeditions to

---

[20] BBC Bitesize, "19th-Century Advances in Medical Knowledge - the Germ Theory - Advances in Medical Knowledge - Eduqas - GCSE History Revision - Eduqas," *BBC Bitesize,* August 24, 2022, https://www.bbc.co.uk/bitesize/guides/zsprg7h/revision/5.

[21] "Gregor Mendel: The 'Father of Genetics,'" *John Innes Centre,* accessed November 8, 2025, https://www.jic.ac.uk/research-impact/our-strategic-research-programmes/harnessing-biosynthesis-for-sustainable-food-and-health-hbio/impact/peas/the-history-of-pea-research-at-the-john-innes-centre/gregor-mendel-the-father-of-genetics/.

[22] Robin McKie, "The 10 Best Physicists," *The Guardian,* May 11, 2013, https://www.theguardian.com/culture/gallery/2013/may/12/the-10-best-physicists.

[23] "BBC - History - Historic Figures: Jethro Tull, accessed November 9, 2025, https://www.bbc.co.uk/history/historic_figures/tull_jethro.shtml.

space[24] and understanding of the universe and physics laws are all almost exclusively Western endeavours.

When we look at cutting-edge fields like artificial intelligence[25] and biotechnology, the mathematical foundations, computational theories, and research methodologies being used today originated in Western academic and research institutions. The same goes for machine learning algorithms, neural network architectures, and genetic engineering techniques.

Manufacturing semiconductors using established processes, even with improvements in efficiency or precision, is different from discovering the quantum mechanical principles that make semiconductors possible. Applying artificial intelligence to new problems is different from developing the mathematical theories underlying AI. Using modern medical equipment is different from discovering and understanding the physics principles that make medical imaging possible.

The complexity of creation runs far deeper than most people realize. When Western scientists developed quantum mechanics in the early 20th century, they weren't just making incremental improvements to existing physics, they were revolutionizing our fundamental understanding of reality itself. When they created the transistor, they weren't just building a better electronic switch, they were applying quantum mechanical principles to create an entirely new category of device that would enable the digital age.

Now, can we find prominent non-Western scientists who made significant contributions? Certainly. C.V. Raman from India won the

---

[24] Iain Todd and Jess Wilder, "50 of the Greatest, Most Famous Astronomers of All Time," *BBC Sky at Night Magazine,* July 15, 2024, https://www.skyatnightmagazine.com/space-science/famous-astronomers.

[25] "Who Is the Father of AI and Machine Learning?," *LSMT,* accessed November 9, 2025, https://lsmt.org.uk/blog/who-is-the-father-of-ai-and-machine-learning.

Nobel Prize for the Raman effect[26]. Subrahmanyan Chandrasekhar contributed to stellar physics theory[27]. Tu Youyou discovered artemisinin for Malaria from traditional Chinese medicine. Hideki Yukawa predicted mesons. These are genuine achievements worthy of recognition.

But examine their educational backgrounds and research contexts. Chandrasekhar studied at the University of Cambridge and worked primarily in the United States[28]. Almost all others trained at Western universities. Almost all worked within research frameworks developed in the West. Tu Youyou, the best example that can be found for someone who had no direct Western training, drew on traditional Chinese medicine while using modern scientific methodologies to isolate, test, and validate artemisinin,[29] a medication for Malaria.

Take C. V. Raman, often celebrated as India's homegrown genius. Raman's education took place entirely in colonial India, at Presidency College, Madras, an institution founded by the British to replicate Western scientific thought. The college's faculty was trained by the British. The first Principal of the college, for one example, E. B. Powell, was a British educationist, among others[30]. The syllabus, the experimental methods, the very instruments Raman used, were all Western imports. While his discovery of the Raman Effect was

---

[26] "C.V. Raman The Raman Effect - Landmark," *American Chemical Society,* accessed November 9, 2025, https://www.acs.org/education/whatischemistry/landmarks/ramaneffect.html.
[27] "Nobel Prize in Physics 1983," *NobelPrize.Org,* accessed November 9, 2025, https://www.nobelprize.org/prizes/physics/1983/chandrasekhar/facts/.
[28] "Nobel Prize in Physics 1983," *NobelPrize.Org,* accessed November 9, 2025, https://www.nobelprize.org/prizes/physics/1983/chandrasekhar/biographical/.
[29] Ulrika Royen, "TU YOUYOU," *NobelPrize.Org,* April 29, 2025, https://www.nobelprize.org/stories/women-who-changed-science/tu-youyou/.
[30] "Origin and Growth of Presidency College," accessed November 9, 2025, https://www.pcaachennai.com/Courses-in-the-Beginning.html.

profound, its recognition and validation came through Western scientific channels, culminating in the Nobel Prize from Sweden. Another South Asian physicist, Abdus Salam, a Pakistani Nobel laureate, studied in the United Kingdom[31], wrote papers in the language and style of Western physics, and received his recognition through Western awards and journals.

Consider Qian Xuesen in China, or Hideki Yukawa in Japan. Qian's early work in aerodynamics was done in the United States under the supervision of top American scientists[32]. Kyoto Imperial University[33], where Yukawa studied, had its entire physics curriculum modelled on German physics programs, down to textbooks and methodologies. Japan, since the Meiji Restoration (1868), imported Western science wholesale, sending scholars to Europe and the U.S. to replicate institutions back home. Kyoto's faculty was trained in Europe, mostly Germany.

Just like the ancient and medieval contributions to science were overwhelmingly Western, modern contributions to science and technology have likewise been overwhelmingly Western even if we ignore the fact that those few non-Western contributions came from individuals who appear to have been trained at Western universities or worked in Western laboratories.

If there is spare time, I would invite the reader for a challenge: take 20 things or everyday products and make a list. It could be

---

31 "Professor Abdus Salam (1926-1996), Nobel Prize in Physics 1979," *Imperial College London,* accessed November 9, 2025, https://www.imperial.ac.uk/about/introducing-imperial/our-people/award-winners/nobel-winners/abdus-salam/.

32 BBC News, "Qian Xuesen: The Man the US Deported - Who Then Helped China into Space," *BBC News,* October 27, 2020, https://www.bbc.co.uk/news/stories-54695598.

33 "160 Years of German-Japanese Friendship: Germany's Role in Japan's Modernization," *Nippon.Com,* December 27, 2021, https://www.nippon.com/en/japan-topics/g02012/.

anything big to small. From hydroelectric power stations to a toothpaste. Try to find major ingredients and components in each of those products and trace inventions, theories, and science behind every ingredient, and follow their path of technology.

Some of those products may go back to centuries in the past. Along the entire way, make note of each and every scientist, engineer, and school that contributed to it. Thanks to the internet today and artificial intelligence, if you search it the right way, you will probably succeed in tracing origins of major ingredient of those 20 products. Do not have an observer's bias; in fact, have a bias against the West. Despite any kind of bias, you will find that the origins of each of those products always lead to almost entirely Western roots.

Exercise: Tracing the Technology Tree

What follows is a concise conceptual exercise designed to illustrate the core idea, without resorting to excruciating detail or expanded technology trees.

I call it *"A Day in Modern Life!"*:

Morning Routine

- **Alarm clock/phone alarm**: Electronics (transistor, integrated circuits): Western
- **Electricity powering the light**: Electromagnetism (Faraday, Maxwell): Western
- **Toothbrush & toothpaste**: Industrial plastics + chemicals in paste + fluoride (modern chemistry): Western
- **Shower with hot water**: Plumbing systems (Rome - modernized in West), water heaters (thermodynamics, fluid dynamics, materials engineering): Western

- **Clothing**: Mass-produced via industrial textile machinery (UK Industrial Revolution) or made of synthetic fibres (nylon, polyester): Western

Breakfast

- **Coffee or tea**: The crops may come from Africa/Asia, but processing, packaging, and global trade networks rely on Western technologies (refrigerated shipping, logistics): Western
- **Bread/cereal**: Industrial milling, yeast studies (Pasteur), food safety standards: Western
- **Refrigerator keeping milk, juice, butter safe**: Refrigeration (thermodynamics, phase change, working fluid): Western
- **Cooking on gas/electric stove**: Gas distribution and electrical grids: Western

Commuting to Work/School

- **Car, bus, train, or plane**: Thousands of extremely sophisticated technology components virtually all invented in the West
- **Roads, traffic lights, GPS navigation**: Modern road networks (Western urban planning), GPS (US military invention)
- **Bicycle**: Modern design perfected in the West

Work or Study

- **Laptop/desktop computer**: Built entirely on Western physics, mathematics, and inventions (transistors, semiconductors, von Neumann architecture, internet)
- **Smartphone**: Uses same Western foundations, plus GPS, internet, touchscreens

- **Internet access**: TCP/IP (Cerf & Kahn, US), World Wide Web (Berners-Lee, UK): Western
- **Office buildings/schools**: Structural steel, reinforced concrete, elevators, HVAC: Western engineering marvels
- **Medicine in your drawer**: Antibiotics, painkillers, vaccines: all Western discoveries

Entertainment & Leisure

- **Music on Spotify/YouTube**: Digital compression algorithms, internet protocols: Western computer science
- **Movies or Netflix**: Camera (Western invention), cinema (Lumière brothers, France), television: Western
- **Sportswear/equipment**: Synthetic fabrics, mass production, global branding: Western

Healthcare (when needed)

- **Hospitals**: Modern medical institutions designed in the West
- **Scans/imaging**: X-rays (Roentgen, Germany), MRI (Lauterbur, Mansfield, US/UK), CT scan (UK/US): Western
- **Drugs & vaccines**: Penicillin (UK), insulin synthesis (Canada), mRNA vaccines (Germany/US): Western
- **Surgery**: Anaesthetics (US/UK), sterile technique (Lister, UK): Western

Evening & Night

- **Dinner**: Refrigerated, canned, or packaged foods (Western preservation technologies)
- **Lighting**: Lightbulb (Edison, Swan): Western
- **Heating/cooling**: Central heating, air conditioning (Western inventions)

- **Entertainment again**: Books (modern printing press, Gutenberg), TV, gaming consoles (built on Western computing)
- **Bedtime**: Synthetic mattress foams, industrial fabrics: Western

The technologies traced in the exercise above are a tiny part of the everyday modern life; they barely scratch the surface.

Let's go a little deeper and take the very first example from the list: the phone alarm. I have previously mapped far larger systems like jet airliners and laptops; here, I narrow the focus to a small, everyday function. Even this seemingly simple tool is the product of a vast technological tree. While this list could be extensive, I will note just a few key components.:

Digital Clock and Timer Mechanisms; Quartz Crystal Oscillator; LCD/OLED Display; Speaker and Audio Output; Vibration Motor; Haptic Pattern Programming; Sensor Integration; Piezoelectric Effect; Operating System; Programming Languages; Binary Code System; Boolean Logic; Quantum Mechanics; Electromagnetism; Solid-State Physics; Wireless Communication Protocols; and Global Positioning System Integration.

Every single one of these components have their own technology trees with hundreds or thousands of further scientific mechanisms. Almost the entirety of it was conceived, created, developed, and continually enhanced in the West.

Exercise Result:

Wherever you are on earth, from the moment you wake up to the moment you go to sleep, nearly everything modern you touch, wear, eat, or use is powered by Western science and technology. Even when the raw materials come from elsewhere, their processing,

preservation, mass distribution, and everyday usability depend on Western inventions.

Technology Proliferation and Large-Scale Economic Extraction

Evidentiary status of claims in this section:
Direct personal observation: ●
Publicly documented cases: ●
Pattern-based inference: ●
External corroboration: ●○ *(Mixed)*

While crises take the centre stage in the news, a massive act of economic blunder may have unfolded quietly, almost invisibly. Over the past 70 years or more, Western nations seem to have systematically trained, equipped, and enabled their future competitors, handing over centuries of scientific progress and technological mastery without debate, without compensation, and without the consent of their citizens.

It does not look like it was a natural diffusion of knowledge. It was not an organic "rising tide lifting all boats." It seems to have been a deliberate policy despite overwhelming evidence of its catastrophic consequences.

Everywhere you look, from China's $4 trillion manufacturing base[34], Taiwan's dominance of the semiconductor industry, Dubai's skyscrapers, South Korea's electronics empire, and Japan's precision manufacturing, you are seeing Western science, Western engineering, and Western methodologies replicated abroad. Entire industries, worth trillions annually, exist only because Western nations trained hundreds of thousands of foreign engineers and scientists annually across multiple decades, funded the education of a portion of them

[34] "Measuring China's Manufacturing Might," *ChinaPower Project,* December 17, 2024, https://chinapower.csis.org/tracker/china-manufacturing/.

with Western taxpayer money, and even taught them in coordination on how to build and sustain competing infrastructures back home.

The very populations whose ingenuity built the modern world rarely reap the rewards. The cities rising in China, the UAE, India, or Japan are not wholly indigenous creations, they are overwhelmingly Western at their core.

They might have reverse-engineered simpler products here and there, but even those would have been surpassed within years by the relentless advance of Western science and engineering. Local knowledge would have contributed marginally to infrastructure if we are speaking of truly modern cities. In short, the vast wealth embedded in cities worldwide, and in almost every modern product more broadly, could largely have remained in Western hands. I'll give concrete examples and document this claim in the following pages.

As I mentioned before, this was not progress by invention. Patterns suggest it was progress by transfer. No civilization in history has ever done this before—voluntarily dismantled its own technological advantage. For millennia, civilizations guarded their knowledge like crown jewels; today, Western nations give it away to anybody who could replicate it. The result? A very likely silent, massive, unprecedented transfer of wealth and power from the very societies that created modern science and technology… to those now using it to outcompete them.

I will be focusing on countries such as China, South Korea, Japan, India, Singapore, and Taiwan, nations that have advanced far enough to compete with the West today and have successfully replicated and scaled Western technologies within their own economies.

History of Safeguarding Technology Compared with Contemporary Landscape

Let me share how the Byzantine Empire learned how to produce silk locally. Silk was a sought-after commodity in ancient times, produced only in China and traded worldwide. The Silk Road, the ancient trade network between the East and the West was called Silk Road precisely because of this one precious product. Its production was a heavily guarded secret. The Chinese Empire of that time had soldiers stationed along the entirety of their part of the Silk Road just to ensure that the technology theft didn't take place. Merchants and travellers were checked along the entire route and anyone in possession of silk worms or any manuscript that indicated an attempt at technology theft was executed right then and there on the road. The Byzantine Emperor of that time hired two monks to smuggle that technology out of China. They were successfully able to smuggle silkworm eggs and mulberry seeds in their hollowed walking sticks[35]. That smuggling enabled the Byzantine Empire to produce silk locally from that time onwards.

Venice, from 12th century all the way up until 1800s closely guarded its glassmaking technology from the rest of the world. I'm not even talking about all and every technology, but very specific one technology: glass. Just that. Just to safeguard its secrets of glassmaking, Venice relocated its entire glassmaking industry to the Island of Murano. Anyone who worked in glass factories were forbidden to leave the island. Leaving the island without official permission or revealing technology secrets was punishable by death[36].

---

[35] "Silk Worms Are Smuggled to the Byzantine Empire," *EBSCO,* accessed November 9, 2025, https://www.ebsco.com/research-starters/history/silk-worms-are-smuggled-byzantine-empire.

[36] David Shotwell, "Glass A to Z," *Krause Publications,* 2002.

It remained a closely guarded secret for centuries and Venice benefitted immensely.

Technologies far sophisticated today, especially since 1950s seem to have been freely shared by every Western nation to every nation on earth that would take them. These policy choices appear historically anomalous and, at minimum, strategically reckless. And the worse thing? It is not one technology. It is not just silk, it is not just glassmaking technology, it is all modern technology.

Today, cutting-edge technology tends to sometimes concentrate within large corporations thanks to immense resources at their disposal. Some corporations may have played a role in the unchecked proliferation of technology, alongside Western governments themselves. These represent two of the most accessible gateways for a possible subversive influence when it comes to modern technology.

Where my view departs from mainstream explanations is in intent. I argue that this was not merely the by-product of ordinary corporate or government behaviour, but possibly the result of deliberate action. The consistency of these policies raises questions about whether this was purely organic. The reasoning behind this assessment is developed in the sections that follow. Additionally, when viewed within the wider pattern of system-wide sabotage explored throughout this book, this explanation begins to appear increasingly plausible.

Counterarguments

I will soon detail contemporary and historical examples/case studies, but first, let's address some of the common counterarguments used to justify this phenomenon.

"NEO-COLONIALISM"

I see no issue with a civilization that has spent centuries advancing science choosing to safeguard those achievements, sharing them responsibly with the world if it is in the contexts of FDI/joint ventures, and even retaining certain technological secrets to preserve global market reliance on its expertise. If someone wishes to call that "neo-colonialism," my answer would be this: *what you're advocating for is essentially large-scale technological espionage—not on a corporate level, but on a civilizational one.* In some countries, such actions could warrant execution, and in many others, imprisonment—if those nations possessed any technological advantage worth protecting.

It's too late now, but if countries wanted skyscrapers, they could have simply hired those who knew how to build them. If they wanted to construct their own, they were free to figure it out independently. If they needed lightbulbs, they could buy them—no one ever stopped them. But they had no right to expect Western nations to hand over centuries of accumulated knowledge, neatly packaged for replication.

The West owes that to no one, and safeguarding its technological achievements is not "neo-colonialism."

TRAINING FOREIGN WORKERS VERSUS COMPETITORS

There exists a crucial difference between training foreign workers and training foreign competitors. Training workers to perform specific tasks under Western supervision and management represents a controlled economic relationship where value capture remains with the originating company.

There are explanations offered, such as "companies did it unconsciously." In my view, this is implausible.

You could train an electrical, mechanical engineer, and chemical engineer, and they will be specialist in their respective areas; polymer engineer in specific component of polymer engineering, petroleum

engineer in petroleum sciences and so on. There is no way even for the smartest person on earth, or ten for that matter, to then go on to build an entire industry or factory from that knowledge. They would still have been reliant on Western companies to employ them. They could refine petroleum, the petroleum engineer, but could they build a factory that relied on mechanical, chemical, mechatronics, electrical, electronics, materials engineering fields, and so on working together in tandem? No! They would know just one part of something that required hundreds of different separate fields of science and engineering working together in accurate precision.

And then they would still need machinery needed to set up those industries because the machinery would itself be extremely sophisticated technology. For someone to build an entire industry or factory, you would have to actively train them, hundreds of them at the same time, coordinate them, build precise infrastructure, and provide relevant sophisticated machinery. And this is exactly what happened, as seen in the rise of China's industry, Japan's electronics sector, and Taiwan's semiconductor industry, among several other examples.

Today, some of these countries have acquired enough knowledge from Western science to replicate those industries independently. This is a capability they did not possess in the past. This point will become clearer in the *case studies* section.

"COLD WAR GEOPOLITICS," "CONDITIONS OF MARKET ACCESS," AND "MUTUAL ECONOMIC BENEFITS"

It doesn't really seem to be truly about *Cold War geopolitics*. Whatever explanations are offered—neoliberalism, geopolitical balancing, or strategic alliances—they seem insufficient. The political logic of the Cold War—maintaining alliances and fostering prosperity among partners—never required giving away one's cutting-edge technologies

and knowledge to be reproduced. Warning signs were already visible by the 1970s, when several of those allied nations had begun transforming into direct competitors. Yet Western countries continued the practice.

The reasoning of "*conditions of market access"* does not justify the phenomenon very well either. The nations in question were technologically illiterate when the systematic training of their talent began. Without it, they would not even be able to effectively use shared technology, even if it were provided to them. Also, if a nation or a company possesses superior technology, other countries would naturally seek it out. They would buy it eagerly and even compete to secure access, often at premium prices. Enabling the replication of your own products doesn't guarantee market access; it guarantees the opposite. It erodes your competitive edge, enables companies in those nations to produce the same technologies themselves, and eventually turns them into global competitors.

I understand the nuances though. For example, today the Chinese government restricts certain categories of foreign companies from operating independently, forcing them instead to form joint ventures with Chinese firms as a condition for market access, a practice that facilitates technology diffusion. Yet China would not have been in a position to impose such terms had it not first received decades of extensive technology transfer and training of its domestic talent.

I also understand the temptation for random Western companies to accept these terms, as they are responding to an ecosystem that was itself shaped by decades of unrestrained transfer. No foreign country, including China, could have dictated such conditions in the 1950s, nor even throughout much of the twentieth century, yet the Western nations continued to empower them regardless (I will go into

those details soon). The result is what we see today: industrial giants capable of enforcing terms that once would have been unthinkable. This is a dynamic entirely of the West's own making.

The argument of *mutual economic benefit* weakens considerably under closer scrutiny. The notion suggests that by sharing knowledge, conducting joint R&D projects, and training competitors, the West secures trade partnerships, cheaper goods, and a supposed "rising tide lifts all boats" outcome. It justifies some of the technology proliferation of more mundane products, but not on a scale we witness today. Again, it overlooks the long-term structural effects: when you teach competitors to produce what you once uniquely created, you don't generate mutual prosperity, you create future rivals. And, as history has shown time and again, those rivals eventually dominate the very markets the Western companies once led, always using the very expertise they were freely provided.

"JUST A POLICY FAILURE" OR "EDUCATIONAL PRESTIGE"

I don't think it is as simple as a policy failure because if it was, they would have addressed this fifty years ago when they started seeing this strategy backfiring. Any rational actor seeing their industrial base hollowed out and their technological advantages transferred elsewhere would change course. And it wasn't just one nation, rather all major Western nations adopting identical policies almost simultaneously.

The uniformity is striking. It is difficult to explain how so many independent actors would make and then persist with similar, economically costly decisions over seven decades. This is not how independent policy is supposed to look.

As for the idea of *institutional prestige* that universities or academic institutions might have sought by teaching foreign talent, it makes little sense. *Prestige* alone cannot justify it, especially when there was

no tangible benefit a university could gain beyond a sense of goodwill. The fact that this pattern has continued for so long makes that explanation unconvincing. As demonstrated by numerous examples cited in later sections, these were nationally driven policies before they became conventions, not isolated academic gestures. Western institutions already possessed immense prestige through their own local talent, which continues to dominate nearly all meaningful scientific and technological achievements to this day.

Excluding local talent, favouring foreign recruits, and then praising those recruits disproportionately for contributions made within Western scientific frameworks has become a kind of civilizational DEI initiative. It flatters foreign talent while simultaneously downplaying the cultural and institutional soil that made those contributions possible in the first place.

Even after 70 years of training foreign talent, even advanced countries such as China have produced relatively few research environments that rival the breadth and depth of Western scientific ecosystems, apart from areas that build directly on latest Western-conceived innovations.

Prestige is not explainable by university administrators wanting to feel good about themselves.

"TECHNOLOGY DIFFUSION"

Some might argue that knowledge inevitably diffuses. That no matter how much the West guarded its inventions, other nations would eventually catch up. They could point to Venice's glassmaking dominance, which after centuries eventually declined, or the smuggling of silk from China to Byzantium. But this analogy collapses under the weight of modern complexity.

Glassmaking and silk cultivation could, in time, be reverse-engineered by determined craftsmen. But modern science is not silk.

Modern technology is not glass. No artisan, no matter how clever, could reverse-engineer a skyscraper, mobile phone, a Boeing jet, or a semiconductor chip. A skyscraper is not just "taller bricks." A smartphone compresses into a palm-sized device the combined knowledge of physics, chemistry, computer science, electrical engineering, and materials science, representing centuries of accumulated Western discovery.

Without deliberate training, such knowledge could not be replicated. It does not "diffuse" like dye in water. It requires formal instruction, rigorous teaching, and years of disciplined mentorship.

I am not suggesting that the West should have been greedy or excessively protective of its technological edge. Had events unfolded naturally, without this unchecked proliferation of technology, the outcome would likely have been far less extreme. There would have been a fairer, more balanced path between these two polarities.

"HUMANITARIAN TECHNOLOGY TRANSFER"

It's not selfish for the West to guard its knowledge. The question of improving lives across the world with advanced technology sounds noble, but it breaks down under scrutiny. Because what we've witnessed over the past century has not been humanitarian uplift. It has been the opposite: technology placed in the hands of oppressive regimes, weaponized against their own populations and, increasingly, against the West itself.

And let's be clear: no nation on earth has a moral obligation to play saviour to the entire planet. It is not the job of the United States, Britain, or Europe to subsidize the modernization of rivals. Nations exist to protect their own people, not to build factories and armies for others. Yet the West seems to have acted as if it were duty-bound to dismantle its own advantage, even while its competitors acted with ruthless pragmatism.

The result? A world less fair, not more. A world in chaos, where "humanitarian assistance" laid the foundations for authoritarian prosperity, while the very civilization that created modernity suffers decline. A natural course of history should have been allowed to unfold—with the West retaining its rightful leverage, and others gradually being allowed to replicate technologies they could not produce—to a degree that was fair.

Case Studies

Let us now examine some historical/political case studies and examples that illustrate this transfer of technology.

THE TRAINING OF JAPANESE AND SOVIET TALENT AND THE COMPREHENSIVE INDUSTRY TRANSFER

The United States, Germany, and Great Britain trained much of the top talent of the Japanese Empire from the late nineteenth to the mid-twentieth century. They sold ships, licensed designs, and trained Japanese engineers and naval officers. The Japanese Navy itself was modelled on Western navies. Several major Imperial Japanese Navy warships were built in British shipyards[37], and Japanese engineers learned Western methods before replicating them at home[38].

Hundreds of thousands of Allied sailors and soldiers died fighting an empire that had weaponized the very expertise voluntarily handed to it by their own countries.

And what did the U.S. and Britain do after defeating Japan? They didn't learn. Instead, they doubled down. Within years, Washington and London were pouring cutting-edge technology into their former nemesis once more[39]. As I pre-empted earlier, this doesn't seem to be "Cold War Politics." U.S. firms licensed critical know-how in electronics, automobiles, steelmaking, and precision machinery, among the most advanced and frontier technologies possible at the

---

[37] "Japanese Battleship: 'Kashima' or 'Katori,'" *Royal Museums Greenwich,* accessed November 9, 2025, https://www.rmg.co.uk/collections/objects/rmgc-object-126009.

[38] Yukiko Fukasaku, "Foreign Influence in the Development of Shipbuilding Technology and the Education of Engineers in Japan, 1855–1940," *History and Technology* 12, no. 2 (1995): 119 - 127, https://doi.org/10.1080/07341519508581879.

[39] Hiroyuki Odagiri and Akira Goto, "The Post-War Technological Progress and Government Policies," in Technology and Industrial Development in Japan, *Oxford University Press,* 1996, https://doi.org/10.1093/acprof:oso/9780198288022.003.0003.

time, under justifications such as "market access." The result was inevitable: Japanese industry, armed with imported Western expertise and nurtured under American security guarantees, grew into a fierce global competitor. By the 1970s and 80s, Japanese cars, consumer electronics, and machine tools were eating into Western markets, forcing Detroit into crisis and nearly wiping out segments of the U.S. electronics industry.

Fast forward to today: Japan remains one of the world's foremost industrial powers. Its automakers dominate global sales. Japanese robotics, materials science, and high-end manufacturing equipment are indispensable across global supply chains. What began as a one-sided transfer of knowledge has hardened into permanent structural competition, with the West still footing the bill for decisions made decades ago.

Take another example: Soviet Union. Soviet Union was a European country with much of the population with Slavic European roots. The USSR and preceding Russian Empire had received vast help from Western European nations with technology and training. Peter and Catherine the Great had tried to Westernise Russia from as far back as 1700s[40]. Russia is culturally a Western country. Soviet Union/Russia's rulers, populations, prominent people, and scientists were, and to this day, remain largely European. Modernisation of the Russian Empire before the Bolshevik Revolution would have been essentially just assisting another culturally and brotherly Western nation.

However, after the Red Revolution, it somewhat disconnected from Western nations politically and became hostile to Western values and cultures. Still, Western nations seemed to have been too

---

[40] Iulia O Basu-Zharku, "The Reign of Peter the Great," *Inquiries Journal* 3, no. 01 (2011).

eager to enable a rival to compete with them. The Soviet Union's industrial base was built on Western-designed factories, Western engineers, and Western imported machinery[41]. For one example, hundreds of factories were built in post-revolution Russia in a span of just few years by West European and American companies. The technology transfer continued taking place for much of half a century in the early to middle twentieth century. The Western assistance with military and civil technology turned it from a serf country into an industrial juggernaut, something that led it to challenge the very Western nations later on who had helped it. It still continues to rival the West both militarily and economically.

TAIWAN'S CHIP INDUSTRY

In the mid-1970s, one of the most consequential technology transfers of modern times was set in motion. Leaders from Taiwan's Ministry of Economic Affairs, the Industrial Technology Research Institute (ITRI), and America's RCA (Radio Corporation of America) convened to formalize an agreement in 1976. Under this deal, RCA licensed its 3-inch CMOS semiconductor process to ITRI and agreed to train a cadre of Taiwanese engineers directly in the United States.

Nineteen carefully selected engineers were dispatched across America—learning IC design in New Jersey, manufacturing in Ohio, verification in California, and equipment in Florida[42]. And that was just the first batch. Within years, Taiwan's pilot factory was not only operational but producing yields that surpassed RCA's own. The

---

[41] "Ford Signs Automobile Contract with Soviet Union," *EBSCO,* accessed November 9, 2025, https://www.ebsco.com/research-starters/history/ford-signs-automobile-contract-soviet-union.

[42] ITRI. "Adopting Technical Knowledge from RCA to Develop Taiwan's IC Capabilities." *50 Years of Empowering Industry Through Innovations.* Accessed October 22, 2025. https://50th.itri.org.tw/en/history/semiconductors/1/.

transfer had been so thorough that Taiwan had leapfrogged the original source.

If that was not enough, a decade later, in 1987, the next decisive step occurred: the founding of TSMC (Taiwan Semiconductor Manufacturing Company)[43]. It was built on a partnership between the Taiwanese state and Dutch giant Philips. Roughly half of the investment came from Taiwan's government, while Philips contributed both capital and critical technology.

You would think the RCA or Philips would have empowered their own countries, those who actually created the chip, but no, they instead enabled the most strategic technology to mature in a nation continent away in a completely different culture.

What began with Western technology, capital, and coordinated training rapidly evolved into an industrial powerhouse. Today, TSMC produces more than 90% of the world's most advanced chips[44], placing the heart of global semiconductor supply chains squarely in Taiwanese hands. Industries worldwide now depend on these chips for artificial intelligence, smartphones, high-performance computing, and more. In less than fifty years, this act of knowledge transfer has birthed a rival so dominant that even its original benefactors now depend on it for the most cutting-edge components of their economies and militaries.

---

[43] Taiwan Semiconductor Manufacturing Company, "Philips, TSMC and EDB Investments Team to Develop New Chip Production Facility," *Taiwan Semiconductor Manufacturing Company,* January 1, 1970, https://pr.tsmc.com/english/news/2115.

[44] The Economist, "Taiwan's Dominance of the Chip Industry Makes It More Important," *The Economist,* March 6, 2023, https://www.economist.com/special-report/2023/03/06/taiwans-dominance-of-the-chip-industry-makes-it-more-important.

LARGE-SCALE SCHOLARSHIP PROGRAMS FOR FOREIGN TALENT

The training of foreign talent continues today, not as an accident or by-product, but as official policy across nearly every major Western nation. Flagship scholarship programs such as Fulbright (United States)[45], Rhodes (United Kingdom)[46], DAAD (Germany)[47], Erasmus (European Union)[48], and Commonwealth Scholarships[49] systematically extract the brightest minds from developing nations and place them in the very heart of Western academia. These programs are not fringe or marginal, they are celebrated, taxpayer-funded initiatives, advertised as symbols of "openness" and "cooperation." As evident from the cited sources, each year, thousands of the most capable students from Asia, Africa, and beyond are granted access to cutting-edge laboratories, advanced engineering faculties, and elite research centres that took the West centuries to build.

Majority of them also receive free accommodation, meals, and stipends for the duration of their programs, all funded by taxpayers.

I want to be clear: I do not wish to sound heartless or indifferent. Please don't judge me just yet. I care deeply about genuine humanitarian causes, and I firmly believe that all nations, Western or

---

[45] "Foreign Fulbright Program," *Foreign Student Program,* accessed November 9, 2025, https://foreign.fulbrightonline.org/about/foreign-student-program.
[46] "The Rhodes Scholarship," *Rhodes Trust,* accessed December 29, 2025, https://www.rhodeshouse.ox.ac.uk/scholarships/the-rhodes-scholarship/.
[47] "DAAD-Scholarships," www.daad.de, accessed November 9, 2025, https://www.daad.de/en/studying-in-germany/scholarships/daad-scholarships/.
[48] "20 Years of Erasmus Mundus," *Publications Office of the EU,* May 22, 2024, https://op.europa.eu/en/publication-detail/-/publication/fa2067a3-18cb-11ef-a251-01aa75ed71a1/language-en.
[49] "Scholarships," Commonwealth Scholarship Commission in the UK, June 2, 2019, https://cscuk.fcdo.gov.uk/about-us/scholarships/.

otherwise, should help those in need. However, things are not always as they appear on paper.

What happens after foreign students' education in Western nations concludes? Many return home to establish parallel industries, universities, and laboratories. Some of these scholarship programs such as Fulbright explicitly require graduates to return to their countries for at least a specific period of time (2 years) as a term of condition, essentially binding them to disseminate Western knowledge in their home countries. The net result is clear: the West educates, at its own expense, the very people who then work to replicate, replace, and ultimately rival Western products and businesses.

Those who remain are often rewarded through subtle forms of DEI. The overall outcome remains the same: Western populations are left at a disadvantage.

According to official figures, the Fulbright Program alone has sponsored hundreds of thousands of scholars from over 160 countries since its founding, offering scholarships to approximately 4,000 foreign students each year[50]. The DAAD funds tens of thousands of foreign students annually in German institutions.

The combined cost of these scholarship programs across Western nations potentially reaches tens of billions annually. Justifications often emphasise economic gains from foreign labour and tax contributions, an argument frequently repeated in immigration debates. However, resources allocated on this scale could, if invested differently, yield far greater and far long-term and structural benefits, something that these programs depreciate in multiple ways in the long run.

---

[50] "Foreign Fulbright Program," *Foreign Student Program,* accessed November 9, 2025, https://foreign.fulbrightonline.org/about/foreign-student-program.

The justification of "soft power and diplomacy" falls flat in today's dysfunctional landscape of international politics, shaped by the very subversion the West faces. These countries' decisions are not swayed by scholarships for their students. Such reasoning may look good on paper but does not reflect reality. What the West truly needs, for one example, among a plethora of other effective and far less costly soft power initiatives, is investment in honest and principled leaders across the world.

To put this into perspective, the West could fund hundreds of thousands of scholarships for students from a given country over the course of five decades, and it would still mean nothing in the face of an accusation that a Western nation helped overthrow one of that country's popular leaders. In an instant, fifty years of investment and supposed "soft power" would be erased—tens or hundreds of billions of dollars rendered meaningless. The resentment that follows can last for generations. This is not a hypothetical scenario; it is a reality in my own country of origin.

In this light, "soft power and diplomacy" sound more like paper justifications than compelling strategic reasons. Foreign scholarships seem to increasingly function as a form of international DEI.

The immediate cost amounts to tens of billions, while the long-term cost—through the spread and transfer of technology—ultimately proves colossal, even by conservative estimates. These funds would be far better invested in nurturing local talent, where they would yield genuine and lasting impact.

Claims of "humanitarianism," as discussed in earlier sections, hold little real weight, in my opinion.

MILLIONS OF ANNUAL SELF-FINANCED FOREIGN STUDENTS

If tens of thousands of foreign students being trained across Western nations on scholarships was not enough, about more than a million in USA alone are being trained annually in Western knowledge as well, overwhelmingly from non-Western nations[51]. Other nations, such as Canada, Australia, Germany, and the United Kingdom, admit hundreds of thousands more each year from these regions, with several approaching annual totals of nearly a million.

Imagine the level of desperation it must take for a country as advanced as China to accept the tariffs recently imposed by the current U.S. administration, to ensure that Chinese students could continue studying at American universities[52]. Yes, that was one of the trade-offs: China agreed to the tariffs on the condition that its students remained welcome in the U.S. The current U.S. administration, to its credit, is the only one in recent Western history that has taken any meaningful steps to curb the unchecked transfer of technology and the unrestrained training of international students. At any given time, hundreds of thousands of Chinese students alone study in the United States[53].

There has been a huge number of technological patents filed in China in recent years, but under scrutiny, it has been revealed that those are usually the iterations of technology already perfected in the

---

[51] Jeanne Batalova, "International Students in the United States," Migrationpolicy.Org, July 23, 2025, https://www.migrationpolicy.org/article/international-students-united-states.
[52] Reuters, "Trump Says China Will Supply Rare Earths, US to Allow Students," *Reuters*, June 11, 2025, https://www.reuters.com/world/china/trump-says-china-will-supply-rare-earths-us-allow-students-2025-06-11/.
[53] Jeanne Batalova, "International Students in the United States," Migrationpolicy.Org, July 23, 2025, https://www.migrationpolicy.org/article/international-students-united-states.

West. Director of *the Expert Committee of the China Electronics and Information Industry Association* admitted that only about 10% of patens from China have barely a market value, and that the rest 90% are "trash," a term he himself used[5455].

That said, I hold immense respect for China, other Asian nations, and their people. Their contributions to the world are profound and enduring, and their civilizations stand as equally important to the world as the West. Chinese culture and its history is something I have always been fascinated with, and I have found them to be brilliant and amazing as people.

Returning to the topic, additionally, a remarkably large proportion of PhD students in the United States are now foreign nationals. In certain fields, such as engineering, computer science, and other frontier technologies, foreign students constitute an astonishing share of total enrolments[56].

This imbalance has become so deeply entrenched in the system that even Western governments appear to struggle to rein it in. When the U.S. administration recently sought to address the issue, it was not foreign governments but American courts and university administrations themselves that reacted most aggressively[57].

---

[54] Alex He, "What Do China's High Patent Numbers Really Mean?," *Centre for International Governance Innovation,* April 20, 2021, https://www.cigionline.org/articles/what-do-chinas-high-patent-numbers-really-mean/.

[55] 迅风知识产权, "**董云庭率性直言：中国**专利90%**都是垃圾**," March 15, 2019, https://www.sohu.com/a/301468372_100156202.

[56] "International Students - IIE Open Doors," *IIE Open Doors / International Students,* January 7, 2022, https://opendoorsdata.org/annual-release/international-students/.

[57] "Enhancing National Security by Addressing Risks at Harvard University – The White House," *The White House,* June 4, 2025, https://www.whitehouse.gov/presidential-actions/2025/06/enhancing-national-security-by-addressing-risks-at-harvard-university/.

INDUSTRIES AND CITIES IN CHINA

In the 1950s, the Soviet Union, itself a beneficiary of wholesale Western technology and knowledge transfer, launched a sweeping industrial aid programme for China known as the *156 Projects*. Although originally intended to comprise 156 initiatives, the programme ultimately delivered roughly 140.

These were not modest development efforts. They consisted of large-scale, capital-intensive, technologically advanced industrial complexes, amounting to a near-total transfer of modern industrial capability in a single, coordinated push. The scale was staggering. Total investment approached 45.7% of China's GDP at the time[58]. Entire industries were transferred intact, including machinery, technical expertise, operational systems, and institutional know-how including training of Chinese engineers and production supervisors[59].

Just as other Western nations showed little regard for the future competitors they were creating virtually everywhere in the world and continue to do so without seemingly a second thought, the Soviet Union appeared equally indifferent to the consequences of actively enabling its inevitable economic competitor.

Under any rational strategic calculus, the most populous nation on earth, and in extension, one of the biggest consumer countries in the entire world, a direct neighbour and ally on top, would have remained structurally dependent on Soviet exports and military assistance permanently. It would have singlehandedly defined Soviet Union's economic and export landscape, and would have comprised a vast percentage of its economy for generations. Entire industrial

---

[58] Li, Bo, and Michela Giorcelli. "Technology Transfer and Early Industrial Development: The Case of the Sino-Soviet Alliance." *CEPR*. Accessed January 16, 2026. https://cepr.org/voxeu/columns/technology-transfer-and-early-industrial-development-case-sino-soviet-alliance.

[59] Ibid.

cities across the Soviet Union would have existed for one purpose alone: servicing China.

Instead, the Soviet leadership dismantled it in one single push. What followed was not merely an economic blunder but a historic strategic mistake. Even more striking is what did not follow: no reckoning, no scandal, no serious review. The decision does not seem to have been publicly acknowledged as a mistake at all. That silence is another one of the anomalies, in my opinion, and it suggests something at work that goes well beyond normal criminal miscalculation or incompetence.

And we are not even talking about the eternal competition that was sure to emerge immediately, which exactly was the case. Within a matter of years, strategic rivalry emerged exactly as any sober analysis would have predicted. The consequences were swift, irreversible, and catastrophic for Soviet long-term interests.

The outcome is now clear. China not only far outcompetes Russia, but has surpassed much of the West. The transfer was complete and consequential.

As discussed earlier, since then, China has sustained and advanced its technological capabilities largely through the systematic training of its talent in Western nations and through pervasive and methodical technology espionage, allowing it to remain broadly aligned with the global technological frontier.

Let’s go further in detail. Building on these foundations, let's examine how these historic and current transfers of knowledge manifest in China's contemporary landscape.

Today, few images symbolize China’s rise more than its modern cities. Forests of steel and glass skyscrapers, sprawling industrial parks, six-lane highways, airports larger than European towns, and metro systems moving tens of millions daily.

Take the skyscraper. Its DNA is entirely Western[60]. Widen the lens: the glass curtain walls[61]; the HVAC systems; and the electrical grids. Even the truly modern asphalt beneath the wheels, the advanced concrete tunnels of the subways, the ultra-modern impressive steel bridges over rivers, all of it traces back to Western science and engineering. The Chinese high-rise is not a native innovation; it is a direct copy of Western breakthroughs. These did not exist before the technology transfer I just outlined.

Today, China is the second largest world economy by GDP[62]. Entire megacities, such as Shanghai, Shenzhen, Guangzhou, and Beijing, potentially boast infrastructures worth tens of trillions of dollars each. Without the past and ongoing wholesale transfer of knowledge, these cities would not exist in their present form. Left to the natural course of time, China would still have relied on Western or Soviet contractors to build its metros, its sophisticated bridges, its airports, and its financial districts. The economic benefits lost as a result are beyond calculation.

China has undeniably been one of the most capable civilizations throughout history, and I hold deep respect for it. My discussion here concerns technology alone. Civilizations encompass far more than modern science, and nothing in this observation is meant to portray China negatively. I have genuine admiration for the country and its people, they are remarkable.

---

[60] Britannica Editors, "François Hennebique," *Encyclopedia Britannica,* July 20, 1998, https://www.britannica.com/biography/Francois-Hennebique.
[61] "Pilkington Award," accessed November 9, 2025, https://sgt.org/page/PilkingtonAward.
[62] Petros Symeonidis, "The Top 10 Largest Economies in the World by GDP," *FocusEconomics,* December 16, 2025, https://www.focus-economics.com/blog/the-largest-economies-in-the-world/.

OIL INFRASTRUCTURE OF GULF COUNTRIES

In the 1930s, Saudi Arabia was among the poorest nations on earth. Today, its annual GDP exceeds US $1.2 trillion[63]. And that's only Saudi Arabia. Include the rest of the Gulf oil producers, the UAE, Qatar, Kuwait, and the rest, and the scale becomes vast.

It was Western firms such as Standard Oil, Bechtel, and Schlumberger that provided the seismic imaging, advanced drilling rigs, and refinery systems. From the 1930s onward, the concession structure was modest: Western companies kept the majority share, while the host nations received royalties of 10-20 %[64]. But by the 1970s, the tables had turned: those nations assumed 80-100% control[65].

A nation has a right to its resources, but not a right to foreign companies and their assets. Imagine a landowner appropriating an entire factory within a few years of leasing his land, taking control of its production, machinery, and technical know-how, while the original owner simply walks away as if nothing unusual has happened.

Despite the West still holding the irreplaceable technological leverage, it simply accepted the reversal in the Gulf. There were paper buyouts and nominal compensations, but it is a common knowledge that it was nationalisation of those Western assets.

I am not suggesting that nations should not benefit from their natural resources. What I am suggesting is that what took place was not a natural progression but the West's relinquishment of the ownership of its own refineries and other irreplaceable leverage; at worst deliberate, and at best, the result of profound incompetence.

---

[63] "DataSaudi," accessed November 10, 2025, https://datasaudi.sa/en.
[64] "General 1 — History of Oil & Gas in Qatar," *History of Oil & Gas in Qatar,* accessed November 10, 2025, https://www.historyofoilgasinqatar.com/module-2.
[65] "Saudi Aramco," *Encyclopedia Britannica,* accessed November 10, 2025, https://www.britannica.com/money/Saudi-Aramco.

Oil reserves, on their own, are meaningless without the technical expertise to extract, refine, and distribute them. A simple one-year halt in Western technology, and production would have dropped to a trickle. The Gulf states had no leverage. Even those royalties amounted to billions of dollars annually, far too tempting to forgo for previously the poorest nations of the earth.

Yet Western leadership allowed nationalisation to proceed. Before nationalisation, Chevron and other major firms held substantial equity stakes in Aramco—now Saudi Arabia's state-owned oil company. Aramco was founded and privately owned by American oil companies. By 1980, those firms were gone entirely.

Even if nationalisation had taken place, the outcome would not have been dramatically different, because nationalisation is not the same as technological independence. The West could still have retained an irreplaceable leverage over extraction, refining, and technical services, keeping its firms indispensable to the global energy market. Instead, by making its advanced scientific knowledge open to anyone and everyone, the West ultimately eroded its technological advantage.

Saudi Arabia's King Abdullah University of Science and Technology (KAUST)—built with overwhelming American expertise[66]—now produces thousands of locally trained engineers annually. Its programme structures, early faculty, construction and governance were all U.S.-derived. As reflected on the university's

[66] "New Alliance Announced between Imperial College and King Abdullah University of Science and Technology," *Imperial News,* accessed November 10, 2025, https://www.imperial.ac.uk/news/30514/new-alliance-announced-between-imperial-college/.

official website, its top scholars and leadership remain predominantly Western[67].

Even today, Western firms remain responsible for the most advanced refinery technologies in the Gulf region. The less sophisticated technologies and maintenance operations are increasingly handled by local, Indian, and Chinese engineers.

I do not believe that dependence on oil had anything to do with this reversal; in reality, the Gulf nations depended far more on Western technology. I find the counterarguments on this point unconvincing. What seems to might have occurred was a careless handover: the transfer of hundreds of billions of dollars in perpetual annual revenue, even while the West still held all the technical and strategic leverage.

USAID

What's interesting about USAID is that it used to employ the same flawed reasoning and justifications historically used to enable technology proliferation and the transfer of knowledge, only this time, the projects themselves were often absurd.

USAID has been sold to the public as charity and "development aid." For decades it has funded scholarships, technical assistance, research labs, agriculture programs, and workforce training across the globe, not just feeding people, but training people to replicate systems at home. USAID had been systematically dismantling long-term advantage.

USAID's Job Enabling English Proficiency (JEEP) program in the Philippines was previously criticized by members of the U.S.

---

[67] "Office of the President," *KAUST,* accessed November 10, 2025, https://www.kaust.edu.sa/en/about/administration/office-of-the-president.

Congress for threatening American jobs[68]. The program's stated goal was to train graduates in English-language proficiency, effectively preparing them for service and outsourcing roles, positions that would, in practice, compete directly with U.S. labour. And that is precisely what happened. USAID, however, defended the initiative, offering the familiar overused justification that it was part of a broader framework of "education" and "trade development."

USAID had been funding everything in the world on American taxpayer's money. Few prominent and ridiculous examples being Moroccan pottery classes, transgender Comic Book in Peru, "Inclusive Workforce" Programs in Egypt, DEI Scholarships in Myanmar (Burma), and "Boosting Tourism in Tunisia." It spent $50 million on boosting tourism in Tunisia[69], a non-strategic ally, while U.S. domestic tourism infrastructure crumbled.

"PERVASIVE" TECHNOLOGY ESPIONAGE AND TECH HACKING

I find it strange that some non-Western countries always seem to catch up with every major Western technological advancement, whether it's fighter jets or other sophisticated military equipment.

Countries such as China are known to steal technology blueprints extensively and "pervasively," and this is according to one of their own career spies, who alleged that espionage is everywhere

---

[68] "U.S. Suspends Controversial Outsourcing Training Program," *Suffolk County Democratic Committee,* September 3, 2014, https://suffolkcountydems.com/content/us-suspends-controversial-outsourcing-training-program-0.

[69] U.S. Embassy Tunis, "The United States Injects USD $50 Million into Tunisia's Tourism Sector with the Visit Tunisia Project," *U.S. Embassy in Tunisia,* February 2, 2022, https://tn.usembassy.gov/the-united-states-injects-usd-50-million-into-tunisias-tourism-sector-with-the-visit-tunisia-project/.

across every Western institution[70]. Here are some quotes from this article: *"He warned that it (China) was snooping on companies everywhere 'from big cities to small towns - from Fortune 100s to start-ups, folks that focus on everything from aviation, to AI, to pharma'."*

Even the non-hacking technology transfer is covered by the article: *"China has also gained expertise by making foreign companies hand over technology under joint venture agreements in exchange for access to the Chinese market."*

The FBI, in its report, estimated that the annual cost to the U.S. economy from counterfeit goods, pirated software, and the theft of trade secrets ranges between $225 billion and $600 billion[71].

It's important to note that before the 1950s, China and similar countries lacked even the foundational capability to comprehend advanced technological blueprints, until their talent was trained in unrestrained numbers. Without that mass training, they would not possess the ability to replicate technology.

A World Without Western Contributions to Science and Technology

I would like to argue against the myth of "inevitable progress." There will be a slight repetition from my previous sections but it is important for a point I'm making.

South Korea, Taiwan, China, Japan, Singapore, India, today's only technological competitors of the West pre-1950s were arguably

---

[70] Yong, N. (2023, January 16). Industrial espionage: How China sneaks out America's technology secrets, *BBC News,* https://www.bbc.co.uk/news/world-asia-china-64206950.

[71] Nicole Sganga, "Chinese Hackers Took Trillions in Intellectual Property from about 30 Multinational Companies," *CBS News*, May 4, 2022, https://www.cbsnews.com/news/chinese-hackers-took-trillions-in-intellectual-property-from-about-30-multinational-companies/.

quite dry in technological terms and had basic technological infrastructure let alone access to sophisticated technology. Could these countries have independently invented, or even reverse engineered, something as little and lightly sophisticated as the light bulb? The answer is almost certainly no. A light bulb was not simply a clever trick of glass and wire; it was the product of centuries of accumulated science and industry. To make such a device required (i) a working theory of electricity, and an understanding of conductivity, resistance, and materials physics, (ii) methods of systematic experimentation, laboratories equipped with precision instruments, and a larger scientific culture and ecosystem, and (iii) industrial machinery capable of producing fine glass, high-quality filaments, and reliable electrical components. Each of these 3 required hundreds of years of consistent efforts by countless scientists and engineers working at any given time. Each of these 3 were entirely non-existent in any of the cultures in the world except the West.

In the late 1800s and even middle 1900s, only the West had all of these simultaneously in place, the result of steady refinements beginning with ancient Greece, Rome, the Renaissance, the Scientific Revolution, and the Industrial Revolution. China, South Korea, Japan, and India certainly had rich intellectual traditions, but they had not undergone the same systemic transformation of knowledge into science → engineering → industry.

Without that infrastructure, "reverse engineering" something like a light bulb would have been impossible. Even with a bulb in hand, they would have lacked the instruments to measure what was happening inside, the theoretical physics to understand it, and the industrial base to reproduce it.

Independently inventing something as simple as the lightbulb would not have taken mere decades elsewhere, it could easily have

taken centuries, perhaps millennia. And that's only if other parts of the world had a systematic cultural affinity for science, which they did not seem to possess.

Take the electron or electricity: without the West, that discovery might not have happened, along with most other foundational discoveries that ushered the modern age. Humanity might still be stuck in perpetual fifteenth century, never breaking free into the modern world. Even if the concept of electron had arisen somewhere else, in cultures without the structured and sustained intellectual ecosystem, it would likely not have been built upon. That would have left us locked in a scientific Middle Ages for tens of thousands of years—or forever.

This isn't speculation; history has already proven it. China, India, Singapore, Japan, Korea, or any non-Western civilization did not pursue such ideas in a meaningful manner. They didn't come remotely near to that.

Modern technology is not inevitable. What made the decisive difference was the unique cultural environment of the West and its people's ingenuity, a culture that nurtured curiosity, structured experimentation, and the willingness to pursue even strange, complex, and seemingly trivial ideas.

Psychology? Archaeology? Again, disciplines born and developed solely in the West. These are just a few examples out of countless others where the spark, growth, and institutional support came exclusively from Western nations.

A question I would like the readers to consider is this: how different would modern world truly look if the non-Western contributions to science had never taken place? My own view is that the overall landscape would remain almost identical. Perhaps there would be a slight delay for few technologies at certain points in

history, but the trajectory would not shift in any meaningful sense. Even without outside contributions, the core engines of modern science and technology were rooted in Western intellectual traditions, institutions, and systems of inquiry. The modern age would have emerged regardless.

Now consider the inverse scenario. Imagine if Western contributions to the modern world had not taken place. There would have been no Industrial Revolution, no Renaissance, and no modern scientific method.

Without it, the world would look nothing like it does today.

This cuts against a common myth: the idea of "inevitable progress." Many assume that if one society hadn't made a breakthrough, another would have done so eventually. But history says otherwise. Progress is not automatic. It required the West, uniquely, to bring these breakthroughs into being, to recognize their value, and to build the modern world upon them.

IMPORTANT NOTE

In the current mainstream climate, this book will likely be labelled "Eurocentric." That is expected. We live in an age where even mathematics is racist[72], where objective reality itself is treated as twistable. Labels have become substitutes for argument.

But some facts cannot be hedged. Some realities are not matters of perspective or preference. Mathematics is not far-right. Physics is not political. The structure of the universe does not bend to narrative fashion.

---

[72] "Seattle Schools Propose To Teach That Math Education Is Racist—Will California Be Far Behind?," *Hoover Institution,* accessed January 12, 2026, https://www.hoover.org/research/seattle-schools-propose-teach-math-education-racist-will-california-be-far-behindseattle.

This book does not assert superiority; it asserts reality. Where evidence is overwhelming, dilution is dishonesty. When truth becomes inconvenient, suppressing it does not make it disappear, it merely postpones reckoning.

I will not participate in the distortion of foundational knowledge to satisfy unnatural ideologies nor will I hedge truths and historical and civilizational achievements. Facts remain facts, regardless of how unfashionable they become.

Conclusion

Perhaps the most consequential dimension of this technology proliferation is not skyscrapers, but the everyday products used by nearly 8 billion people worldwide. Modern toothpaste, lightbulbs, refrigerators, microwaves, laptops, smartphones, medicine, fertilizers, cars, planes—the list is endless.

I will repeat what I have stated before: imagine if the natural course of life had been allowed to unfold. Please bear with me for a few paragraphs, I do not intend to sound materialistic or extractive, but in such a world, every country on earth would still be reliant on Western companies for the supply of most of these goods.

The economic benefits forfeited are so vast they defy calculation. We are not talking about billions, nor even trillions, but potentially tens of trillions every few years—the difference between the West maintaining a rightful proprietorship over modern technology versus sharing the blueprints with every aspiring competitor.

Almost every product in a supermarket aisle in Asia, every car on a highway in South America, every appliance in a home in Africa, every medicine in a hospital, each of these should have been part of a civilizational economic feedback loop, benefitting the nations that

created them. This, in turn, would have skyrocketed the pace of human progress.

Instead, they have become symbols of a civilization that trained the entire world to replicate its inventions, then stood aside as competitors captured the very benefits those inventions generated.

Of course, there would have been nuance. Knowledge would still have spread, technologies would still have flowed outward, and cooperation, assistance, and genuine humanitarian exchange would have taken place. A rising tide would still have lifted every boat.

What would not have occurred is the scale, speed, and indiscriminate transfer that ultimately undermined the very societies that created these systems in the first place. The issue is not sharing, but excess. Not cooperation, but the erosion of the rightful equilibrium.

If the natural course of time was allowed, populations that have carried the torch of human progress would be living at levels of prosperity far beyond anything seen today. Western nations are already among the richest on earth, yet without this dilution of advantage, their standards of living would likely be unrecognizable.

Non-Technological Contributions of Western Civilization to the World

I think one of the most subtle yet powerful factors shaping the long-term resilience of a civilization lies in something so quiet, so hidden, that it's easy to overlook: the collective moral foundation of its people. If one wonders how certain societies continue to thrive despite continuous subversion, challenges, and obstacles, this may be part of the answer.

Imagine, as a thought experiment, two communities of 100 people each. Both are given identical resources, opportunities, and environments to build their futures. Outwardly, everything appears balanced. Yet there's a hidden difference: in one community, most people have grown up with a strong internal compass, a shared sense of fairness, personal responsibility, and the ability to cooperate even when things get tough. In the other community, people are just as capable physically, but they don't harbour the same collective cohesion. Let us assume, for the sake of this scenario, that intelligence or cognitive ability is not a factor, although I personally believe that higher mental development naturally strengthens moral awareness and ethical behaviour.

Now, suppose someone deliberately tries to sow division within each group, whispering to individuals that others are slacking, offering secret advantages, or creating subtle doubts. In the community where people broadly trust one another and share strong values, disruption is much harder to achieve. People might question the manipulation, discuss openly, and resist being turned against each other. There is integrity, sense of justice, and chivalry, and so on and so forth.

In the other community, where these values are weaker, such tactics succeed more easily.

This isn't about any specific culture or nation; it's about a principle. Over time, societies where mutual trust, integrity, and a shared sense of right and wrong are cultural norms tend to be more resilient against internal fractures and external pressures. A strong moral foundation creates a kind of invisible shield. It doesn't make challenges disappear, but it makes them far less likely to succeed.

Perhaps this is one reason why some parts of the world have remained remarkably stable and innovative despite facing repeated disruptions. Having lived across three continents, I've seen firsthand how profoundly the underlying values of a society shape its collective strength. Where there's a healthy amount of these qualities, resilience tends to follow.

It's as though the universe itself rewards cohesion, compassion, justice, and integrity. It's as if light, quietly and consistently, finds a way to win.

So, just raising good children and being decent human beings in itself is a huge service to the civilization, and in extension, to the whole world. The world as we know it won't nearly be the same without the contributions of the West, and I fully believe (with good reasons as you may have realized by now), it will cease to be as it is without the West's ongoing role. Western civilization has endured immense malice and hardship for a long time without collapsing because of the stand-up people that make up Western nations. Them, just being there, even living ordinary life, even doing nothing, is I fully believe a huge service and contribution to humanity and the world.

Non-technological contributions of Western civilization to the world are immense, and some of them are discussed in the following sections.

Humanities, Social Sciences, and other Non-STEM Fields

Apart from the extraordinary advances in science, engineering, and technology, Western civilization is also responsible for the inception, development, and flourishment of almost every modern field of study. While certain basic forms of knowledge such as rudimentary economics can be traced back to ancient civilizations across the world, the systematic organization of these subjects into disciplines of modern scholarship is overwhelmingly a Western contribution.

Disciplines such as archaeology, psychology, sociology, anthropology, palaeontology, political science, business studies, finance, management studies, human resources, linguistics, criminology, international relations, accounting, modern economics, and so on were either wholly conceptualized in the West or transformed there into rigorous, independent branches of inquiry.

For example, archaeology as a scientific discipline, with its methodology of excavation, stratigraphy, and dating, emerged in Europe in the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries[73]. Psychology too, while human beings have always speculated about the mind, only became a systematic science with pioneers such as Wilhelm Wundt, William James, and Sigmund Freud, all Western thinkers[74]. Similarly, palaeontology, the scientific study of prehistoric life and fossils, was formalized in Western Europe during the Enlightenment and Industrial Revolution, transforming humanity's understanding of deep time[75].

---

[73] Glyn Edmund Daniel, "Archaeology," *Encyclopedia Britannica,* July 26, 1999, https://www.britannica.com/science/archaeology/First-steps-to-archaeology.
[74] Walter Mischel, "Psychology," *Encyclopedia Britannica,* July 20, 1998, https://www.britannica.com/science/psychology.
[75] Britannica Editors, "Paleontology," *Encyclopedia Britannica,* July 20, 1998, https://www.britannica.com/science/paleontology.

Sociology, founded by figures like Auguste Comte, Émile Durkheim, and Max Weber, provided the first structured frameworks for understanding society[76]. Anthropology developed in Britain, France, and the United States as a systematic study of cultures, kinship, and human diversity[77]. Political science, though rooted in classical Greek philosophy, was reborn as a distinct academic discipline in early modern Europe and North America, later expanding into subfields such as comparative politics and political theory[78]. International relations, as a specialized field, was created almost entirely in the West following the First World War, and continues to be dominated by Western schools of thought and frameworks[79].

Even where non-Western civilizations contributed fragments of knowledge, it was in Western contexts that these fragments were synthesized into coherent fields, professionalized, institutionalized in universities, and transformed into living traditions of scholarship. For example, linguistics as a scientific study of language owes its modern foundations to European philologists and structuralists in the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries[80]. Criminology as the systematic study of crime and criminal justice systems originated in Italy and France and spread across Europe before becoming a global discipline[81]. Economics, though trade and money have always existed,

---

[76] "Sociology in the Nineteenth Century," *EBSCO,* accessed November 11, 2025, https://www.ebsco.com/research-starters/history/sociology-nineteenth-century.
[77] Michael M Horowitz, "Anthropology," *Encyclopedia Britannica,* July 20, 1998, https://www.britannica.com/science/anthropology.
[78] Michael G. Roskin, "Political Science," *Encyclopedia Britannica,* July 26, 1999, https://www.britannica.com/topic/political-science/Historical-development.
[79] Charles A. McClelland, "International Relations," *Encyclopedia Britannica,* July 20, 1998, https://www.britannica.com/topic/international-relations.
[80] "Linguistics," accessed November 11, 2025, https://education.nationalgeographic.org/resource/linguistics/.
[81] Criminology.com, "The History of Criminology," *Criminology,* December 12, 2018, https://www.criminology.com/the-history-of-criminology-2/.

became a modern science through the works of Western thinkers like Adam Smith, John Stuart Mill, and later Keynes, Friedman, and countless others[82].

In addition, the arts and humanities, fields like art history, literary criticism, musicology, and classical studies, were all professionalized in Western Europe. These disciplines established standards of evidence, peer review, and methods of analysis that are still universally applied today.

What is unsurprisingly remarkable, at this point, is not merely the Western origins of these fields, but the extent to which Western institutions, universities, and scholars continue to lead in their ongoing development. The research output, conceptual refinement, and theoretical innovations that sustain disciplines outlined above continue to come predominantly from Western countries.

When one begins to list out the sheer breadth of disciplines born in the West, the picture becomes wide-ranging. Archaeology, psychology, business studies, finance, management studies, political science, palaeontology, linguistics, and so on—the catalogue already stretches long. Yet even beyond these, the West has ceaselessly given rise to entirely new realms of inquiry. Entire modern frameworks of education theory, for example, are the products of Western thinkers: Rousseau reimagining childhood, Dewey redefining schools as laboratories of democracy, Montessori pioneering child-centred learning[83]. What billions of children around the world today experience in classrooms stems directly from those Western innovations.

---

[82] "Economics," *Encyclopedia Britannica,* accessed November 11, 2025, https://www.britannica.com/money/economics.

83 Oelkers, Jürgen. 2002. "Rousseau and the Image of 'Modern Education.'" *Journal of Curriculum Studies* 34 (6): 679–98. doi:10.1080/00220270210141936.

Or consider the newer fields of the past century. Media studies, film studies, communication theory: the ability to critically analyse newspapers, cinema, and television, all originated in Western universities. Entire movements such as cultural studies and gender studies were likewise pioneered in the West, transforming the way humanity looks at identity, culture, and power. Even environmental studies, the recognition that we must systematically study the relationship between humans and the planet, is a Western-born academic movement[84].

The same holds true in the natural and applied sciences. Geology was not merely practiced but systematized by Western minds like James Hutton[85]. Modern geography was elevated into a global discipline by Alexander von Humboldt[86]. Archaeogenetics, fusing DNA analysis with archaeology to write the history of humankind, could not exist without Western advances.

And let us not forget the quieter but indispensable pillars: modern library science, archival science, and information science, the disciplines that ensure the preservation, organization, and accessibility of knowledge itself.

The West did not merely give the world inventions or machines; it gave the world the very languages of thought through which we interpret history, govern societies, heal the mind, analyse culture, preserve knowledge, and imagine the future.

It produces not only material wealth but intellectual abundance, not only tools but frameworks, not only discoveries but disciplines.

---

84 Bill Kte'pi, "Environmental Science," *Encyclopedia Britannica,* April 12, 2014, https://www.britannica.com/science/environmental-science.
85 "James Hutton: The Founder of Modern Geology," *American Museum of Natural History,* accessed November 11, 2025, https://www.amnh.org/learn-teach/curriculum-collections/earth-inside-and-out/james-hutton.
86 Charlotte L. Kellner, "Alexander von Humboldt," *Encyclopedia Britannica,* July 20, 1998, https://www.britannica.com/biography/Alexander-von-Humboldt.

The world does not merely use Western inventions; it inhabits Western-born ideas.

I wish I didn't have to appear so praiseworthy, but as you can see, I have little choice. I feel obliged to do so out of fairness. I have genuinely been detached in my observations, just as I am by background, an individual of non-Western origin.

European and Western History and Culture

At this point, an outside observer reading these achievements for the first time might reasonably ask what kind of civilization it is whose contributions to humanity appear so immense and far-reaching. What sort of culture, history, cities, and daily life could repeatedly produce such outcomes?

The answer is neither romantic nor sentimental. Western civilization, and Europe in particular, possesses a historical legacy whose scope and consequences are unmatched. While all cultures rightly value their past, Europe's history especially stands apart with its rich heritage, and almost endless feats of brilliance, honour, bravery, and good deeds.

The record of achievement produced by Europe is so extensive that it goes well beyond simple enumeration. Generation after generation, Western societies have given rise to individuals whose ideas, characters, feats, discoveries, courage, and creativity permanently altered the course of human history.

The civilizations that emerged from Europe and its periphery, Greeks, Romans, Celts, Britons, Vikings, Goths, Iberians, Germanic peoples, and others, were not merely successful in their own time. Their legacy defines human evolution.

Even the very people who descend from these traditions carry a visible, proud, and distinctive history. Physical traits such as blue,

green, or hazel eyes, and blonde or red hair, appear at scale nowhere else in the world. **This** is the diversity that is actually something to be immensely proud of.

History does not remain abstract. It crystallizes into culture, and in Western nations that culture, too, is extraordinary.

Today, Western customs, ways of life, and standards of living remain unparalleled. I say this not as abstraction, but from direct experience. I have lived in multiple countries. Other regions possess strengths and virtues of their own, but the overall standard of life found in Western societies simply does not exist elsewhere.

This reality is often misattributed to wealth or to the label of being "first world." In truth, the causal direction runs the other way. It is the brilliance, discipline, competence, and cultural orientation of a civilization that determine its level of progress. Western nations became first world societies precisely because of these underlying qualities, not by accident.

It may appear this way, but this is not trivial at all: there is something distinctive in how Western populations shape their environments. Across countries and generations, there is a consistent capacity to create orderly, liveable, and aesthetically coherent spaces. Homes, neighbourhoods, towns, and cities are not merely functional, but designed to support human flourishing. Having lived in other regions, the contrast is unmistakable.

Call it culture, tradition, habit, or sensibility, but this pattern repeats with remarkable consistency. Western societies demonstrate an ingrained instinct for care, maintenance, and improvement of shared space, from the domestic level to entire nations.

It is woven into the fabric of life, expressed quietly and continuously through ordinary behaviour, and it has proven

extraordinarily difficult to replicate elsewhere, except some Asian nations such as Japan, South Korea, and China.

So, this is not an abstract concept. It is a decisive force that shapes the conditions of daily life, how people live, interact, build, and care.

When I later argue that beauty, culture, and tradition are at stake as the West declines, this is what I mean, among many other similarly unique aspects of Western life.

Law & Democracy

The roots of democracy stretch back to ancient Greece, where citizens first experimented with the notion that power should not rest in the hands of a single ruler, dynasty, or priesthood, but in the hands of the people themselves[87]. In ancient Rome, though not a pure democracy, the Republic represented a further leap in humanity's political evolution. While the wealthy patrician families dominated the Senate, the office of Tribune of the Plebs served to balance elite authority with the representation of ordinary citizens[88].

Modern democracy, however, is not merely those ancient seeds, it is the great tree that has been painstakingly nurtured, pruned, and strengthened over the centuries.

Think about it. If you and 99 others work together in a complex environment where all can't participate in every decision, what feels natural? To appoint one person as leader, perhaps by vote, and to reserve the right to replace them if they fail the group. That instinct, multiplied millions of times over, is democracy.

---

[87] "Democracy (Ancient Greece)," accessed November 11, 2025, https://education.nationalgeographic.org/resource/democracy-ancient-greece/.
[88] Smith, Christopher. "The Origins of the Tribunate of the Plebs." *Antichthon* 46 (2012): 101-125, https://doi.org/10.1017/S0066477400000162.

It was the Europe and Americas that carried this instinct to its logical conclusion. The institutions we now take for granted, such as parliaments, legislative assemblies, polling booths, constitutions, courts, and checks and balances, come from these efforts. These are not accidental developments; they are deliberate creations, tested and perfected over centuries of struggle, revolution, and reform. The Magna Carta, the American Revolution, and the French Revolution were each steps forward in the grand project of making government accountable to the governed.

And with democracy comes something just as vital: the rule of law. Not the arbitrary decree of a king, not the whim of a general, not the edict of a cleric. Law as a system. Law as a process. Law as something above even the rulers themselves. Due process, equality before the law, and the idea that even the most powerful must answer to rules written in advance, all of these developments reshaped the world.

Virtually every nation on earth has adopted elements of Western law—from judges' attire to legal language, procedures, and institutional norms. Western legal systems have been replicated across the globe, often preserving the very names of institutions and processes, even in countries that do not speak English. This tradition ultimately descends from Roman law. In the country where I was born, even illiterate villagers are familiar with legal terms that trace directly back to ancient Roman words.

Without democracy and without law, nations collapse into tyranny, corruption, and chaos. With them, nations have a chance at stability, fairness, and freedom.

The West not only pioneered these systems, it spread them. From Europe to the Americas, and from Asia to Africa, the framework of democracy and law became the universal aspiration.

No matter the culture, no matter the language, no matter the religion, when people rise against oppression, they reach for Western-born tools: elections, constitutions, assemblies, courts, and due process.

Democracies are far from perfect, but still the best system humanity has. Minus the subversion that the entire West is going through, and I believe democracy should work far better than it does.

Military, Bureaucracy, Civil Services

Bureaucracy, often derided as slow today, was once revolutionary, because it replaced chaos and corruption with systems, records, and predictable procedures. This Western innovation spread across the world, becoming the backbone of governance.

The military sphere is no different. The professionalization of armies, the establishment of military academies, and the emphasis on training not just soldiers but officers with strategic education all began in the West. The precedent of training foreign officers in military academies, whether at Sandhurst, West Point, or Saint-Cyr, remains in place to this day. Nations send their brightest young officers abroad to learn doctrines of discipline, logistics, and the ethics of command. Today, many countries participate in exchange programs that host and train foreign officers[89], but historically, it was largely the West that provided such training. Western nations even established military infrastructure and institutional ecosystems in other nations.

Countries that have imported these systems of governance and military structures often see them degraded soon after, twisted by corruption, incompetence, nepotism, persecution, and more. The institutions remain in name, but the spirit that animated them is lost. I'm now talking from my own experience in some of those countries.

---

[89] Brandon OConnor, "West Point Cadets Build Important Connections with Army War College International Fellows," *www.army.mil,* October 7, 2019.

Women's Rights and Women's Contributions to Western Society

I have immense respect for women, and I believe their even greater participation in everyday life, more than what we already see, could solve many of the challenges not just in the West, but across the wider world. This may go slightly beyond the central theme of this book, but it is a point worth making.

Western societies have been the pioneer in championing women's rights, recognizing half of their populations as equals. Yes, patriarchal norms existed in the past, as they did everywhere, but no other civilization has advanced as far or as consistently in moving beyond those rigid customs. Today, women in the West thrive in ways unmatched anywhere else, and the rest of the world continues to copy those principles. What's prominent is that women's rightful place in society didn't prove to be only about justice or fairness, it has been a catalyst of prosperity.

When you look globally: nations that suppress women stagnate; nations that empower women flourish. There is a visible causal relationship between women's freedom and a society's success. Speaking from experience, societies that oppress women will almost all of the time prove to be societies where men at large are miserable too. The more developed a nation, the more it honours women, not just symbolically, but in practice.

One of the West's quieter superpowers, as discussed earlier, in my view, is its internal resilience—the decency of its upbringing, its commitment to fairness and honesty, its shared sense of right and wrong. Women are central to cultivating these ideals. I have observed that wherever they are, in households, communities, organizations, women often strengthen and amplify these values in others. Their

presence brings a subtle yet powerful and underlying reinforcement of a civilization's highest ideals.

In addition, every individual who has ever walked this earth was usually raised by a mother. If you want to understand the roots of a civilization's character, look at how its people are raised. Look at its women. That is the most basic foundation of any society. And it extends beyond the household. Women in leadership, whether in business, government, or civil society, bring perspectives that are indispensable. A civilization cannot reach its full strength unless both halves of humanity contribute equally.

Modern history is full of examples. Indira Gandhi steered India during multiple crises. Sheikh Hasina's Bangladesh transformed from one of the poorest countries on earth into a rising success story in the 2010s[90]. Italy today is led with strength by a woman.

I believe there would be less violence, less abuse of human rights, and more commitment to humanity's well-being with women taking active role in politics and leadership across the world. There will always be good and bad leaders, male or female, but history shows that women in power often govern with a fierce defence of justice and a steadier commitment to peace.

Championing Human Rights Across the World

As I mentioned in earlier sections of this book, I endured constant physical, emotional, and psychological abuse throughout my childhood and teenage years. I used to dream of living in a country with a system like child protection services. Unfortunately, apart from Japan and possibly others, I have not found many nations outside the

---

[90] TBS Report, "Bangladesh Economy to Grow at 8% in FY19-20: ADB," *The Business Standard,* September 25, 2019, https://www.tbsnews.net/economy/adb-projects-8-gdp-growth-bangladesh-2020.

West that have a fully developed or functioning child protection framework.

During my childhood, I used to look over the internet and try to find help; all Western sources. There is a lot of evil in the world. I used to believe and I believe now more than ever, that West is the refuge and hope from those evils to many people like me in my childhood. Here, protection services extend for everyone, not just children.

The world is becoming increasingly difficult to offer safe havens. While populations in the developing world are set to double within decades, Western populations continue to shrink and replaced with very dynamics that cause persecution elsewhere. This imbalance strains the very beacon of hope that has long served as a safeguard for people fleeing abuses. If the West weakens, so too does the world's last line of refuge. Many who have endured persecution and cruelty firsthand understand this truth: a thriving West equals a thriving safe world.

As it will be discussed later on, none of this is an argument for open borders or uncontrolled immigration. Quite the opposite. Loose policies undermine the very people in desperate need of real protection.

Circling back, when it comes to minority rights, in no other part of the world have minorities been able to thrive as freely and fully as they have in Western societies. Modern asylum as a legal and organized process, distinct from the ad hoc political exiles of the ancient or medieval world, was developed by Western civilization itself.

Even in the developing countries, Western nations continue to press for justice in ways that others do not. Ombudsmen, NGOs, and human rights organizations, mechanisms often introduced under

Western pressure, exist even in the most authoritarian regimes. They don't function much, but they exist there. For much of my life in such regions, I did not even know these systems existed. And yet, from Amnesty International to Human Rights Watch, the West tirelessly advocates for people thousands of miles away—people they will never meet, people who may even resent them. Western nations continuously speak up for jailed leaders, persecuted minorities, and silenced dissidents.

This commitment to human rights is not mirrored elsewhere. There is no Amnesty International of China, Japan, India, or Korea. Western nations continue to use their limited leverage to pressure other governments over human rights concerns across the globe. This moral impulse remains unmatched, and it is precisely one among many reasons that make the West worth protecting.

At times, this broader instinct is reflected in the actions of individual leaders. I remember President Trump making a personal promise to the mother of an American citizen who was imprisoned abroad. He delivered on that promise just weeks into his presidency. Although many leaders show care and make similar gestures, his sincerity stands out.

Animal Rights

In Western societies, a deep culture of love for pets and animals thrives. Walk through any city or town, and you'll see families with dogs, puppies, and cats—animals that are not merely tolerated, but cherished as companions. Entire industries exist around their wellbeing: sanctuaries, veterinary hospitals, specialized diets, even laws to protect them from cruelty.

While ancient India may have pioneered early laws to protect war elephants, the modern, organized animal rights movement was born

in the West[91]. It was in Western nations that advocacy, legislation, and dedicated institutions for animal welfare took root and spread.

By contrast, in my years living in Pakistan and Africa, pets were rare, and animals often lived in miserable conditions. Where Western civilization has created environments of comfort and care for both people and animals, many regions have lagged behind, with some notable exceptions such as China, Japan, Korea, Turkey, and India, where pets are also widely cherished.

Note: This section is not exhaustive. The non-technological Western gifts to humanity outlined above represent only a small sample of a much larger legacy.

THE LABEL OF "COLONIALISM"

I will not dwell on the ritualised demonisation of Western populations for a historical phenomenon that unfolded centuries ago, commonly labelled "colonialism." Emerging from the medieval world, any civilisation that advanced far enough through sophistication, organisation, and hard work would inevitably have expanded outward. That dynamic was not unique to the West. It was a feature of history. If history were simulated repeatedly, expansion would recur as naturally as people seeking better lives.

The medieval and early modern periods produced a harsh and unforgiving world. Power was contested relentlessly, and conquest was the norm, not the exception. In that context, colonialism was not anomalous. If anything, given how Western societies later came to set enduring standards of a civilized world, and continue sustaining that gift, we may well be fortunate that it was the West rather than others.

---

[91] Ariel Kates, "The Animal Rights Movement's Origins (and Still-Visible Legacy) in Greenwich Village - Village Preservation," *Village Preservation - Greenwich Village Society for Historic Preservation,* May 29, 2020, https://www.villagepreservation.org/2020/05/29/the-animal-rights-movements-origins-and-still-visible-legacy-in-greenwich-village/.

Had it not been the West, it would simply have been someone else. In such a scenario, colonialism might well have endured far longer, likely to this day, with far less regard for the autonomy or prosperity of those subjected to it.

We don't have shortage of examples. The Ottomans fought over India in the early stages of European expansion and could just as easily have colonised it. Timur's campaigns left devastation so extreme that populations believed the apocalypse had arrived. Mongol conquests involved massacres on a scale rarely matched. Arab slave trades were vast and brutal. Carthaginians, Parthians, and countless other powers colonized any regions they could.

Instead, today, we are permitted to examine only one civilization, during only one specific narrow slice of history, while remaining blind to all others and to the universal human dynamics in which colonialism occurred.

Let us, for a moment, accept the narrative at face value. Even within that framing, the conclusion does not hold. There is no justification for assigning blame to present-day descendants in Western societies for a historical phenomenon that occurred centuries ago.

The very fact that you can openly criticize it, even harshly, using derogatory words, while living within it says everything about this civilization. That level of self-reflection, tolerance, and emotional openness is unmatched. Today, human rights abuses exist overwhelmingly outside the Western world. Yet the West alone remains persistently reduced to a caricature of "colonialism."

The All-Encompassing Subversion

What follows should be read neither as a final judgment nor as a claim that any single development, taken in isolation, proves intent. The significance emerges only when these developments are viewed together, across time, sectors, and nations, and when they repeatedly align with the same destructive outcomes. To omit this aggregation, or to treat each instance as unrelated by default, would be analytically dishonest.

The world cannot afford subversion or sabotage directed against a civilization that has given so much, and continues to give so much, to human progress.

Unfortunately, however, the ongoing sabotage apparently extends across a wide and growing range of domains in the West. Whether core civilizational pillars are the actual targets and that the broader harm spills outward due to the large scale of the effort, or all areas of life are under attack intentionally, the outcome is the same: observable patterns of damage operating with little restraint.

Before examining the patterns of sabotage and the apparent breadth of subversion across Western nations, I would like to restate why I believe that this effort seems to be **deliberate** rather than coincidental. I would like to refer to the methodological framework established at the outset of this book.

This framework is set out in *How This Book Reaches Its Conclusions,* right before Chapter 1. Readers are strongly encouraged to revisit it now and whenever they encounter my assumptions of organized and intentional sabotage.

The characteristics of patterns of harm outlined in the stated framework has guided the analysis throughout this book, even when it is not explicitly cited.

I will now circle back to the topic.

There is a high possibility that the West today faces an assault on its very foundations, and the attack comes in overlapping layers: borders, culture, law, family, politics, economy, and even the existence of its people.

One of these fronts could be borders, security, and demographics. That would be open borders and uncontrolled mass immigration that flood systems that were never designed for such volumes. Where native populations have been declining, influxes are incentivized, and all of it seems to be wrapped as "progress," "necessity," and "compassion."

Another cause of concern is crime, violence, and the possibility of compromised internal security. It can be argued, from almost constant news, that imported terrorism networks might have taken root in Western cities. Some argue that uncontrolled immigration has resulted in increase in crime across Western cities. Laws increasingly seem designed to protect the criminal rather than the victim, with catch-and-release policies, soft sentencing, and a justice system that bends backwards for offenders but abandons ordinary citizens.

It is not the scope of this book to catalogue in detail the crimes that appear to sustain the subversion and sabotage of Western nations. Patterns of cover-ups, suppression of speech, atrocities, and systemic wrongdoing have been implicitly referenced throughout this book, including patterns listed near the end of the book that sustain my own persecution. Many readers probably already sense that something is off, that certain incidents, scandals, or even so-called "accidents" do not sit right. Without entering a full evidentiary account here, I will state the observation plainly: patterns of cruelty and crime do not seem to be random. Many seem organized and disturbingly normalised in Western nations.

I ask the reader to keep this in mind, as this pattern will be referenced throughout the book but will become clearer near the end of the book.

From a neutral point of view, there seems to be some cultural war happening in the West. Media, entertainment, and possible psychological operations have been observed relentlessly attacking Western traditions and values. Hollywood and other cultural machines seem to force-feed DEI and diversity quotas and ideological content constantly. Race-swapping has become so pervasive across movies, television, and advertising that it now feels more forced than creative. Historical figures are increasingly being "diversified" with little regard for historical accuracy, truth, or respect for those individuals and for Western culture itself. Forced multicultural mixing and blending which seems to be evident today with endlessly promoted indoctrination risks erasing distinct native identities and leaving people strangers in their own homelands. Schools indoctrinate children with LGBTQ+ and gender theories that would have been unthinkable a generation ago. Western history is rewritten as a litany of guilt and shame, colonial sins magnified while achievements erased.

The possibility of economic and technology sabotage has been discussed at length in the previous sections of this book. Knowledge transfer has been taking away one of the key edges that the West have always had; technology. DEI initiatives further seem to solidify this suspicion that foreigners are being more favoured than people of those very countries. Western nations have been squandering unimaginable amounts of wealth, driven by entrenched conventions wrapped in terms like "compassion," "humanitarianism," and "soft power," among other pretexts.

Even science, health, and the environment seem to have been weaponized against Western populations. Health and environmental crises have emerged with suspicious origins recently. Some allege that food supplies in the West are being riddled with chemicals, GMOs, microplastics, and processed poisons that weaken generations. There seems to be a push against farmers and agriculture in the West while global organizations such as the UN, WFP, USAID, World Bank, and thousands of NGOs endlessly promote, create, nurture, and protect agriculture and farmers in the developing world throwing tens if not hundreds of billions of Western cash into it annually. And then there has been a push against organic meat for synthetic food and insects in Western nations. There is a possibility, that, Climate change, possibly a real concern in principle, is being twisted into a political weapon; possibly being used to strangle Western industry while rival polluters escape scrutiny.

At the level of governance itself, the picture appears no less bleak. Law, justice, and democracy are all showing signs of possible capture, with my own refuge journey serving as a deeply personal example of this erosion. Manipulation within electoral processes may also be occurring in some Western nations. Judicial activism has, at times, overridden the will of the majority.

In matters of war, geopolitics, and global strategy, the West is repeatedly drawn into seemingly artificial conflicts engineered to exhaust its resources. Wars often erupt in regions where none of the major parties hold any genuine vital interest, yet they drag on for years, claiming thousands of lives each week. Forced military recruitment, reaching levels unseen even in some of the world's most tyrannical regimes, has turned countless ordinary people into unwilling participants, leading to the murders of thousands of innocent individuals every week.

At home, some allege that the social fabric and family unit are under direct attack. Children are being subjected to trans surgeries and hormone therapies before they are old enough to understand permanence. Birth rates plummet, and the decline seems to be actively ignored and swept under the carpet.

Psychological manipulation seems to condition entire populations to doubt their own eyes and ears. If you see something, you're told you're crazy; if you question the narrative, you're branded racist or xenophobic.

This was a brief list; the seemingly organized effort appears to extend to every walk of life in the West.

I'm discussing some of the phenomena in more detail in the following sections.

Demographic Subversion

Evidentiary status of claims in this section:

Direct personal experience/observation: ●

Publicly documented cases: ●

Pattern-based inference: ●

Widely accepted & shared inference: ●

External corroboration: ●○ *(Mixed)*

I would like to clarify that whenever I use the term "Western," I am referring to people of European ancestry and to cultures historically rooted in Europe. This includes the European populations of Canada, the United States, Argentina, modern Europe, including Eastern Europe and Russia, as well as Australia, New Zealand, South Africa, and other regions.

One of the most serious forms of subversion confronting Western populations today is demographic in nature, a gradual replacement so profound that, had it occurred to any other group in history or were it happening elsewhere today, it would rightly be recognized as a form of demographic erasure. And if the very use of that word now draws

outrage or denial, remember that throughout history, every time such atrocities unfolded, the same defensive reactions were heard before validation finally came.

I will not sugarcoat this: what I see is a deliberate and organized sabotage of the very existence of Western civilization. Policy choices, multiculturalist indoctrination, and sustained migration dynamics are combining to hollow out native populations. I call it demographic subversion. If you prefer a blunt label, some argue it amounts to an attempted erasure of a people, a charge I will examine with care.

About a century ago, Europe by itself accounted for roughly one-quarter of the world's population[92], and that's not even counting people of Western descent living in regions such as the Americas, Australia, South Africa, and elsewhere. If we include people of European ancestry across the globe, the figure likely reached one-third or more. Today, people of European descent make up barely one-tenth of the global population, and that figure includes populations in the Americas, Australia, and other regions. By 2050, Europe itself is projected to represent only about 7% of humanity, based on estimates made around the year 2000[93]. However, the situation has considerably worsened since then, and a portion of that roughly 7% also included immigrant populations.

Let's pause for a moment and consider the cited Guardian article titled *"The Last Days of a White World.[94]"* If the word "white" were replaced with the name of any other group, the backlash would be immediate and severe. Yet such provocative language, when directed

---

[92] Foresight, "Global Population Is Growing," *Knowledge for Policy,* accessed November 15, 2025, https://knowledge4policy.ec.europa.eu/foresight/global-population-growing_en.
[93] Browne, A. (2000, September 3). The last days of a white world. *The Guardian.* https://www.theguardian.com/uk/2000/sep/03/race.world.
[94] Ibid.

at Western populations, often passes without objection in mainstream media.

This is a no-nonsense observation. How does one explain to a rational person that something which has almost never occurred at this scale in history is suddenly pursued relentlessly by virtually all Western countries simultaneously? If such population movements had been routine in the past, native populations would not exist today. Yet beginning in the 2010s, and in some cases earlier, all of sudden millions of people began flowing into sovereign nations. Not just any nations, but the most powerful and stable countries on Earth.

This did not happen organically. It required the sudden creation of new legal pathways, regulatory loopholes, selective enforcement, and administrative innovations designed to permit what had previously been impossible. Borders that once functioned predictably began to dissolve through mechanisms that appeared rapidly.

What followed were endless pretexts, each inconsistent with the last and often contradicting long-standing policy logic. Economic justifications replaced humanitarian ones, which were then replaced by claims of inevitability, and so on. None aligned with how nation-states have historically behaved when protecting sovereignty, cohesion, long-term stability, and their very existence.

Are we truly expected to believe that this is simply how national borders function, or that such a transformation occurred accidentally, simultaneously, and exclusively within the most consequential nations on Earth?

The most concerning part about uncontrolled immigration into the West is not simply that it happens, but that it happens against the will of the overwhelming majority of Western populations. It feels artificial, staged, and presented as if it is the most complex riddle in the entirety of human history. The Western nations seem just helpless

against it even though the answer is: just do what you would naturally do and it all resolves right away. A nation simply needs to enforce its borders, as every civilization has done throughout history. They could close down the roots from where this illegal immigration is coming from, among many other options.

Take Greece, for example. If its borders were enforced today, the so-called migration crisis across Europe would halt almost instantly. Greece is the primary staging ground, alongside smaller routes through Italy and Spain. These countries have navies and coast guards. There is no plausible way for millions to cross unless it is deliberately allowed. Even the infamous boats that reach Italy could be intercepted, processed, and individuals distinguished between genuine refugees and economic migrants. What makes little sense is why those who do arrive are then waved onward into Germany, France, or the UK, instead of being settled in the first safe country they reach.

How does an Afghan, for instance, cross Iran, Turkey, Greece, and then half a dozen European countries to finally claim asylum in Germany or Britain? Why is this tolerated only in Europe & other Western nations and not in places like China, Thailand, or India, or anywhere else where illegal entry is simply not an option? Why only Western nations? Why all of sudden now? This cannot be explained away as chance. It looks systematic. Even Greece itself has no obligation to absorb economic migrants from as far afield as Afghanistan or sub-Saharan Africa. Genuine asylum cases exist, yes, but what we are witnessing are waves of people with no clear claim to protection being waved through borders that should not be porous.

Some defenders argue that EU asylum laws, such as the suspension of the Dublin Regulation in 2015, allowed this movement

by letting migrants choose any member state to apply in. But that only raises the deeper question: why enable such a loophole when it was clear the system was being overwhelmed, and public sentiment was against it? The claim of "economic need" or "humanitarianism" does not justify the scale, persistence, or disregard for democratic will. Wars and humanitarian crises have always existed throughout human history. But now, all of sudden, it seems that the waves upon waves of immigrants from as far as Afghanistan must continue.

In 2017 and 2018, when I needed refuge, I could not simply cross into my neighbouring countries. Had I tried, I would have been jailed or deported. Borders in Asia are enforced; nations uphold their right to sovereignty. I didn't even know you could cross border illegally and not be shot to death. Instead, I obtained legal visas and travelled to Africa, and later legally sought asylum in the UK. As a legal and genuine asylum seeker, I have faced barriers, personally malicious, unlawful, and illogical ones, and continue to do so in every step of the way in the UK, yet thousands cross illegally with seeming impunity, a disparity that feels engineered.

Furthermore, these patterns extend across continents. The United States, despite existing on a distant landmass with entirely different geographical, cultural, and political realities, has faced an almost identical form of systematic open-border crisis. These patterns point to a possibly coordinated effort directed against the Western world as a whole.

I recently came across another article: *Visualised: Europe's Population Crisis*[95]. It is cited in the footnotes of this page. It presents conclusions that are completely illogical, including the claim that

---

[95] Alex Clark, "Europe's Population Crisis: See How Your Country Compares – Visualised," *The Guardian,* February 18, 2025, https://www.theguardian.com/world/ng-interactive/2025/feb/18/europes-population-crisis-see-how-your-country-compares-visualised.

Europe's population decline will "speed up" if so-called "far-right" political movements succeed. I do not endorse truly far-right or far-left positions, but the article employs the term "far-right" to equate it with people who want to preserve their countries, cultures, and demographic continuity. Its arguments seem disconnected from reality. I would like to quote a few statements from the article directly.

"*'Most politicians on the centre-left and centre-right recognise that immigration is needed to ease demographic pressures,' said John Springford, an associate fellow at the Centre for European Reform thinktank. 'They have sought to focus on tougher – and often inhumane – asylum rules in the hope that stricter border enforcement will provide political cover for higher regular immigration.*[96]*'" "Those countries that manage to hold the line against demands to cut working-age immigration will be in a stronger position economically in the long run.*[97]*"*

The article claims that regular immigration across Western nations will soar. It talks about politicians employing "political cover" just so that they can further increase regular immigration.

In another instance, it argues that high immigration is essential because immigrants will supposedly provide the tax base needed for "soaring pensions and costs for elderly care" in Western economies in the far future.

The article relies on a rather extraordinary assumption. It asks us to believe that Western political parties knowingly chose unpopularity, electoral defeat, and even extinction, defying their own voters to keep borders open, not for present necessity, but for speculative economic benefits far into the future. I struggle to imagine even the most honest leader in any country prioritising the far future over the needs of the present day, while knowingly alienating their entire electorate. Yet the article treats this as a rational and universal

---

[96] Ibid.
[97] Ibid.

explanation for a trend that has appeared consistently, across every Western nation, for decades.

In response to further claims made in the article, without addressing them individually, one point should be stated plainly. Most people in Western nations would rather choose to face economic setbacks or temporary shocks without uncontrolled immigration, rather than erase their nations altogether to avert hypothetical problems several decades to a century into the future. An economy can always recover.

The article carries a tone of quiet condescension, particularly in its discussion of an "aging Europe" supposedly dependent on immigrant doctors and nurses to survive. This framing is deeply unconvincing. A civilization that has sustained much of the modern world for generations does not require pity, nor external caretakers, to look after its own people.

Europe is fully capable of adapting to demographic decline, improving productivity, reforming institutions, and caring for an older population without importing replacement populations to prop up a tax base. No Western population has ever demanded mass immigration for this purpose, yet the article implies that Western governments, in unison, are pursuing it anyway, quietly, deliberately, and without public mandate.

It never considers the possibility of reversing native population decline through internal investment or family-oriented policies, despite projecting decades to almost a century into the future in an article about population crisis. It does not as much as even mention exploring demographic renewal, meaningful support for young families, or policies that respect the wishes and continuity of existing populations. Yet those would be the most natural, straightforward, and historically universal responses to demographic decline in any

society. Such measures would normally rank among the highest policy priorities, maybe even top three, pursued aggressively and early, long before the problem reached a critical stage.

Yet in this case, stepping beyond the article and into reality, that obvious path is not merely neglected but conspicuously avoided. Even where formal policies may nominally exist, they appear largely performative, more symbolic than substantive. Instead of reinforcing what makes a nation itself, the response has been to tolerate long-term demographic deterioration while proposing mass immigration from entirely different continents and incompatible cultures as a substitute.

In the article in question, the author presents his conclusions as if native population decline is irrelevant, as if the demographic composition itself does not matter. It shifts the emphasis entirely toward immigrant populations, framing their presence as an economic necessity, while ignoring another fact: many Western nations have been squandering their wealth for years like there is no tomorrow, behaving as if resources are infinite. I address that pattern later in the book.

Every proposed "solution" circles back to the same answer: open borders, and immigration, again and again.

These are precisely the kinds of pretexts I have warned about throughout this book. Arguments like this carry the same recurring markers: illogical framing, selective interpretation, and a refusal to acknowledge any solution outside the framework of mass immigration. They carry the unmistakable scent of misinformation and manufactured justification, and their reasoning is extraordinarily illogical and detached from reality, the kind of framing typically associated with the broader machinery behind such narratives.

This is not a marginal source, but an article published by a major mainstream outlet, *the Guardian*.

The article also states that Europe's population, without further immigration, will fall to around 295 million by 2100, and with the current average of immigration factored in, rise to approximately 419 million.

Perhaps I am misunderstanding the presentation, but it reads as if future immigrants will constitute close to one-third of already immigrant-heavy Europe's total population by the end of the century.

I will repeat what I said before: everything in the article, which is essentially just following the larger narrative, converges on one point. The proposed solution is always the same: replace declining native populations through mass immigration. No alternative is entertained. There is no discussion of supporting families, reversing native demographic decline, investing in stable long-term population policies, or strengthening the young generations of these countries.

Political parties across the West, according to this logic, are supposedly so invested in the far future, possibly year 2100 or decades preceding it, that they willingly undermine themselves today as parties. They are portrayed as so selfless that, in union, almost all of them across Western nations, appear willing to earn the animosity of their own populations and risk their certain electoral collapse for the sake of a far-future model. They have taken it entirely upon themselves with zero regard for the wishes of people they represent. And this trend is not limited to Europe as the article suggests. You would think it's about Europe only. Nope. The same logic, in one way or another, apparently extends to Australia, Canada, and until recently, the United States, and almost every other Western nation.

The article even highlights a case study of a hollowed-out village being repopulated with a foreign population, and presents it almost

as a model to be admired. It seems to welcome the idea of expanding those kinds of projects across Western world. The demographic transformation of entire communities is framed not as a concern to be debated, but as something to be celebrated and replicated more broadly. It seems there are already model "replacement" villages in the West.

UNEVEN DEMOGRAPHIC PRESSURES: AGGRESSIVE GROWTH EFFORTS ELSEWHERE, CONSTRICTION IN THE WEST

Across the developing world, agricultural capacity building has become one of the central pillars of international aid. Flagship programs such as the defunct USAID's Feed the Future, the World Bank's agricultural and rural development loans, the UN FAO's country programs, IFAD's rural finance and value-chain investments, and the WFP's resilience projects all push in the same direction: making food more plentiful in regions that have historically hosted moderate food production.

The global research consortium CGIAR provides the scientific backbone[98], developing new seed varieties, climate-resilient practices, and pest management systems that are then scaled across Africa and South Asia. These initiatives have not been marginal; they define the agricultural landscape in entire regions.

On the ground, the biggest NGOs mirror this effort. Organizations like One Acre Fund[99], Heifer International[100],

---

98 "CGIAR: Science for Humanity's Greatest Challenges," *CGIAR,* April 7, 2025, https://www.cgiar.org/.
99 "One Acre Fund," *One Acre Fund,* accessed November 15, 2025, https://oneacrefund.org/.
100 "Home," *Heifer International,* November 1, 2025, https://www.heifer.org/.

TechnoServe[101], Mercy Corps[102], Oxfam, CARE, SNV, and Practical Action[103] among thousands of other NGOs run programs that put improved seeds, livestock, irrigation systems, post-harvest storage, microfinance, and digital advisory services directly into the hands of smallholders. One Acre Fund's input credit bundles in East Africa, Heifer's livestock distribution models, or Oxfam's farmer cooperatives in South Asia all exist as extensions of the larger global agenda of capacity building in farming and agriculture in the developing world. Private foundations like the Gates Foundation[104] and multi-country initiatives like AGRA[105] amplify these efforts even further with massive injections of capital and technology. I have personally fact-checked this: there are thousands of NGOs operating in the developing world, specifically focused on agriculture and farming.

All in all, massive global research organizations are entirely devoted to scientific innovation in agriculture and farming specifically tailored for developing countries. Thousands of NGOs then adopt these innovations and implement them tirelessly on the ground.

The focus is not just subsistence farming but linking millions of smallholders to larger markets, creating more resilient supply chains, and embedding donor-backed systems into local economies.

---

[101] "TechnoServe: Global Impact," *TechnoServe,* July 2, 2020, https://www.technoserve.org/.
[102] "Homepage," *Mercy Corps,* accessed November 15, 2025, https://www.mercycorps.org/.
[103] "We Are Practical Action," *Practical Action,* August 15, 2022, https://practicalaction.org/.
[104] "Agricultural Development," *Gates Foundation,* accessed November 15, 2025, https://www.gatesfoundation.org/our-work/programs/global-growth-and-opportunity/agricultural-development.
[105] "AGRA – Sustainably Growing Africa's Food Systems," accessed November 15, 2025, https://agra.org/.

I have no issue with abundant food or resulting skyrocketing fertility. What concerns me are the unsustainable, imposed initiatives and the double standards underlying them, and I ask for your patience and open mind as you read on; by the end of this section, you'll understand why.

These programs are not scattered one-offs—they are systemic. They exist everywhere from Bangladesh and Nepal to Ethiopia, Kenya, Malawi, and the Sahel. They involve vast annual expenditures drawn largely from Western taxpayers and reflect a deliberate transformation of agricultural systems across the developing world. The land that once produced a moderate amount of food for a modest population has been broken open by Western-funded science, technology, and capacity building. The demographic and economic consequences of this massive intervention, particularly in Africa and South Asia, are now visible in the exponential population growth that has followed.

The United Nations itself operates not one but three major agencies dedicated entirely to promoting agriculture, farming, and food assistance in developing regions, an emphasis unmatched in any other sector. These agencies, each comparable or larger in scale to UNESCO, are the FAO (Food and Agriculture Organization), IFAD (International Fund for Agricultural Development), and WFP (World Food Programme). All three are overwhelmingly funded by Western nations.

I want to emphasize again: I have no problem with humanitarian aid, improving healthcare, and helping with famine in sustainable ways, but that's not what's apparently actually been going on. Those are official reasonings often cited for this global push. The results speak more clearly than any official reasoning ever could. A region that hosted a modest share of the world's population in 1900—about

6%—Africa has now surpassed the combined populations of people of European origin worldwide and is on track to become the most populous region on Earth[106], having already grown nearly tenfold.

To grasp the scale of this shift, consider the change in proportion: where there was once roughly one person in Africa for every sixteen worldwide, projections indicate a rise to around one in three in the coming decades (and estimated to reach 40% by 2100), with roughly one in five already attained. And this is an increase measured in billions. The concern is not about any one region, but about the magnitude and pace of demographic change at this scale, wherever it occurs.

And then there is South Asia, and so on. The "Green Revolution" post 1950s in East and South Asia has had effects that are now unmistakably visible.

Take the example of Bangladesh, one of the major recipients of such programs, alongside India and Pakistan. Its population density stands at around 1,350 people per square kilometre[107], compared with just 38 in the United States[108], and 287 in the United Kingdom[109]. Yet the corresponding infrastructure development needed to sustain such explosive population growth severely lags.

What was scaled across South and East Asia after the 1950s is also being aggressively pursued in Africa. Given Africa's vast

---

106 I O Abramova, "The Population of Africa under the Conditions of Transformation of the World Order - PMC," *Herald of the Russian Academy of Sciences* 92, no. Suppl 14 (n.d.), https://doi.org/10.1134/S1019331622200023.
107 World Population Review, "Bangladesh Population 2025," *World Population Review,* November 13, 2025, https://worldpopulationreview.com/countries/bangladesh.
108 World Population Review, "United States Population 2025," *World Population Review,* November 13, 2025, https://worldpopulationreview.com/countries/united-states.
109 World Population Review, "United Kingdom Population 2025," *World Population Review,* November 13, 2025, https://worldpopulationreview.com/countries/united-kingdom.

landmass and accelerating population growth, the scale of what is unfolding there is likely to exceed anything seen in those Asian nations.

When food becomes extremely cheap and abundant, it naturally encourages larger families. In many developing parts of the world, including the regions where I grew up, parents view having more children as a form of security, more hands to work and contribute to the household. With almost unlimited food, that incentive only grows. Abundant nutrition also improves fertility, further driving population increases. Despite this, the mainstream narrative often promotes the idea that combining aggressive agricultural push with education will somehow reduce birth rates, an assumption drawn mainly from patterns seen among a few affluent, highly educated families, not the wider population.

Education and urbanization often cited as solutions to high fertility are lagging effects. At best, they take hold only after the first or second generation of children reach adulthood. By then, the population pyramid is already locked in. As time progresses, poverty will continue to expand, leading to less education overall, no matter how much effort is invested in teaching. This dynamic is visible across the Sub-Saharan Africa, where fertility remains high despite decades of aid. UN projections still place Africa's population at nearly 3.9 billion by 2100[110]. More than 8 out of 10 people in the world will live in Africa or Asia by the year 2100[111].

What's causing these population booms in those countries is not humanitarian aid, rather indifference to suffering on large scale. It is causing unprecedented misery in those regions. Widespread poverty

---

[110] Hannah Ritchie, "More than 8 out of 10 People in the World Will Live in Asia or Africa by 2100," *Our World in Data,* July 15, 2019, https://ourworldindata.org/region-population-2100.
[111] Ibid.

in numbers never existed before in human history, pollution, extreme urban overcrowding, and so on, are the results. Villages that once supported 200 people now strain under populations of 2,000, with the same footpaths, the same boreholes, and collapsing infrastructure.

I'm talking from a lived experience. The quality of life has dropped extensively in all those regions affected by this global push. Whether it is Africa, South Asia, or other regions, they are being overwhelmed by exploding populations.

Agricultural "capacity-building" is among the foremost global initiatives in the developing world today, driven by these international organizations, yet its true scope and implications are rarely understood in Western nations.

What these organizations have built is not something the local populations developed organically, it is an artificial dependency. Now, entire regions survive on Western aid in perpetuity whether food or healthcare aid. If that aid were ever withdrawn, it would trigger an immediate crisis, because genuine self-sufficiency was never allowed to take root. This was one of the causes that sparked uproar among UN staff recently: they admitted that the populations they served could not survive without tens of billions of dollars in annual aid[112]. I genuinely sympathize with people in need, but no other region in the world perpetually requires tens of billions each year for HIV prevention. Funding for HIV prevention alone recently peaked at around $20 billion per year[113]. No nation or region has the right to rely indefinitely on the resources or monetary support of others. It's

---

[112] Imogen Foulkes and Alex Boyd, "US Cuts to HIV Aid Will Cost Millions of Lives - UNAids Chief," *BBC News,* March 24, 2025, https://www.bbc.co.uk/news/articles/c4ge1xjrze7o.

[113] "Global HIV & AIDS Statistics — Fact Sheet," *UNAIDS,* accessed November 15, 2025, https://www.unaids.org/en/resources/fact-sheet.

as if this dependency has become so entrenched that those vast sums are now permanently locked in simply to keep these regions afloat.

And that need for aid will only continue to grow as populations surge. What has been done to these regions is nothing short of heartless.

While this relentless push for agricultural capacity building is ongoing in the developing nations, the opposite is being pushed in Western nations.

In many Western nations, policies have increasingly made life difficult for farmers, often justified by references to climate change and similar arguments. In recent years, widespread farmer protests across Europe have reflected growing resistance to these hostile policies[114].

In the West, *nitrogen caps* function as outright bans on how much fertilizer a farmer can apply to his own land[115]. Exceed the limit, and the result is fines or even shutdowns, restrictions unimaginable anywhere else in the world. Dutch farmers are losing 30% of livestock capacity under nitrogen restrictions[116].

Land retirement policies go a step further. Governments now pay farmers not to farm through programs such as the EU's Eco-Schemes[117] which remove millions of hectares from food production under the justifications of "carbon storage." This is not limited to the

---

[114] Laura Gozzi, "Why Europe's Farmers Are Taking Their Anger to the Streets," *BBC News,* January 27, 2024, https://www.bbc.co.uk/news/world-europe-68095097.

[115] Ibid.

[116] "Dutch Farmers Protest Government's Strict Nitrogen Rules," *The Poultry Site,* accessed December 3, 2025, https://www.thepoultrysite.com/news/2022/06/dutch-farmers-protest-governments-strict-nitrogen-rules.

[117] "Eco-Schemes," Agriculture and Rural Development, accessed December 3, 2025, https://agriculture.ec.europa.eu/common-agricultural-policy/income-support/eco-schemes_en.

EU only, but happening in multiple nations[118]. The outcome? Less food, grown on less land. Again, such policies exist only in the West.

The merits of these land idling policies are debated, and I do not attempt to resolve that debate here. I note only the underlying fact: land capable of producing food is, at scale, being actively idled by governments or diverted away from staple production, something that does not happen virtually anywhere else in the world; and it is historically unprecedented.

Meanwhile, the very same governments and NGOs pour immense amount of money into the developing world to do the exact opposite: flooding Africa and South Asia with agricultural assistance, subsidized fertilizer, hybrid seeds, irrigation projects, and livestock grants, all aimed at maximizing yield per hectare. These are all actual facts and can be fact-checked. The West deprives its own farmers of fertilizers and land, lectures them on "sustainability," while importing the surplus food, and people, from the regions it over-fed.

The "nitrogen cascade" cited for this environmental push is a global phenomenon, an excess of reactive nitrogen spreading through air, water, and soil. The issue itself is worldwide, not local, with major hotspots elsewhere, but only the West responds by limiting its own food output. Some policymakers justify these bans by citing localized water contamination, but that is a matter of treatment and management, not prohibition. You treat the water. You don't ban food. No other region in the world applies such self-defeating logic; it happens only in the West.

Smog, for another example, is an environmental problem in parts of Asia, particularly in countries such as India and Bangladesh, as well as in several other Asian and African nations. It manifests locally,

---

[118] "U.S. Soy Sustainability Assurance Protocol," 2024, https://ussoybean.jp/asset/data/ssap_bookket_2024en.pdf.

where real environmental degradation is actually occurring. However, agricultural scaling in those regions continues.

It is Western countries that are told to reduce food production on the grounds of water pollution and possible risks to aquatic life. These are comparatively far minor issues as compared to smog and others, solvable through targeted mitigation rather than drastic measures.

Farms across the West are being rendered unprofitable by cheaper food imports, burdened with increasing restrictions and hostile laws, and steadily bought out by large corporations capable of consolidating control over the food supply, a phenomenon with severe consequences in the future.

What appears simple on the surface grows stranger on closer examination. Farmers are being pushed to the brink, not by a single policy, but by different sets of hostile measures in each country, converging toward the same outcome despite completely different means. Hostile laws citing economic necessity in one, suffocating environmental mandates in another, and disruptive foreign competition and rising costs in yet another. Each is severe enough to provoke widespread backlash, yet all are unfolding at the same time, all of a sudden, across the Western world.

There has also been a growing push in Western nations to promote insects as food and to discourage the consumption of traditional meat and other healthy natural diets, in favour of highly processed synthetic alternatives.

For instance, Bill Gates of the Gates Foundation stated in a 2021 interview to *MIT Technology Review*, "I do think all rich countries should move to 100 percent synthetic beef[119]," as a way to reduce

[119] James Temple, "Bill Gates: Rich Nations Should Shift Entirely to Synthetic Beef," *MIT Technology Review*, February 14, 2021,

carbon emissions arising from "burping" livestock. I wish I was making this up. It is worth noting that even processed real meat—let alone synthetic alternatives—is widely discouraged by dietitians due to its well-documented health risks, even in the short term, let alone over a lifetime of "100%" consumption. Bill Gates's own foundation funds livestock programs in Africa, and he argues against synthetic meat for those regions in the same interview where he advocates for full synthetic beef consumption in wealthy nations. He even suggests government regulation to "totally shift the demand" toward artificial meat. And, no, this is not about animal care, which would at least be a little convincing.

The gradual decline in birth rates across Western nations is being used as a reason to fill "labour shortages" through immigration drawn precisely from these same regions of the world. In fact, labour shortages, as previously discussed, are cited as one of the official reasons for immigration policies in many Western countries[120]. I'm talking about legal immigration policies at this point, which always escape scrutiny, let alone the issue of illegal open border immigration.

Additionally, international development organizations spend further tens of billions of dollars in Western taxpayer funds each year on healthcare initiatives in the same developing nations, even as many Western countries face mounting healthcare challenges and declining birth rates. These programs, too, are overwhelmingly funded by Western nations, typically accounting for nearly, or over, 90 percent of their total budgets. I believe it is not the duty of Western nations

---

https://www.technologyreview.com/2021/02/14/1018296/bill-gates-climate-change-beef-trees-microsoft/.

120 "Migrant Labour Key to Boosting Employment in the EU," *Migration and Home Affairs,* accessed December 3, 2025, https://home-affairs.ec.europa.eu/news/migrant-labour-key-boosting-employment-eu-2025-10-14_en.

to spend billions on "international development" and worry about everyone else in the world, especially when it faces its own existential crises as a civilization. First priority should be safeguarding of its own people, and only then it can think about safeguarding other people across the world, not the other way around. People in the other regions of the world should be allowed to care for themselves; the West cannot babysit everyone else in the world.

And then there are the few longest-serving UN peacekeeping missions[121], still operating in those same regions and spending billions of dollars each year merely to maintain security for them—something no other part of the world has required for decades on end, certainly not at this scale. Again, unsurprisingly, it is the Western nations that bear most of these costs.

No nation should depend on international security assistance and tens of thousands of UN soldiers for 20 or 30 years at a time. While the UN should, of course, support regions in need, such aid cannot evolve into a permanent hand-holding, especially when it consumes tens of billions of dollars annually from other nations.

In total, more than $50 billion per year in food, health, and security aid is poured into the developing nations, with overall assistance exceeding $200 billion annually, according to OECD official figures[122], the overwhelming majority of it coming from Western countries. That's a trillion dollars of Western taxpayers' money being spent in less than five years on so-called "humanitarianism," which in reality is creating an unsustainable strain

---

121 "United Nations Peacekeeping," *United Nations Peacekeeping,* accessed December 3, 2025, https://peacekeeping.un.org/en.

122 "Official Development Assistance (ODA) 2023 Final Figures," accessed October 29, 2025, https://www.oecd.org/en/events/2025/01/official-development-assistance-oda-2023-final-figures.html.

on the planet, and that's only just UN "international development" agencies.

Furthermore, there is yet another $50 billion worth of annual funding for large NGOs operating in those regions[123]. On top of it used to be USAID, which reached another $20 billion in annual funding, and then there is the IMF, the World Bank, and private foundations such as the Gates Foundation, along with other national initiatives like scholarships and development programs, all funded directly or indirectly by Western taxpayers.

This is a long-running phenomenon spanning multiple decades, having been an established practice in one form or another since at least the 1950s.

If there is any truth to climate change, it is these very policies that are driving the real damage. The resulting rapidly expanding populations bring with them every major to minor driver of greenhouse gas emissions: increased industrial activity, greater energy demand and electricity production, rising vehicle numbers and transport emissions, expanded agricultural activity, consumption of meat coming from "burping livestock," and the infrastructure required to sustain all of it.

Despite representing less than ten percent of the world's population, Western nations are uniquely restricting their own industries, energy use, and even food production. Meanwhile, eighty to ninety percent of the world's population pollutes virtually freely and, in several regions, the very drivers of pollution are being scaled up exponentially with the aid of Western nations.

---

[123] NGO Finance, "Large NGOs: The Most Influential and Impactful Non-Governmental Organizations in 2025," *NGO Finance Hub,* August 27, 2025, https://ngofinancehub.com/large-ngos/.

What is framed domestically as environmentally necessary restriction becomes, elsewhere, an "international development" growth priority.

This asymmetry is neither environmentally coherent nor morally or logically consistent.

I will end this section at this: lasting progress in these developing regions cannot come from unending dependence on Western nations, it must come from genuine self-reliance. The global machinery must finally allow them to stand on their own, and the continual misappropriation of Western wealth must come to an end.

AN UNFOLDING DEMOGRAPHIC CATASTROPHE

Another one of the most consequential and pressing concerns for humanity should be the fact that the fastest-growing region by population in the world cannot perform even the most basic modern, self-sustaining tasks.

I should mention here that I have great respect for Africa and its people. During the five years I spent there, I found them to be genuinely wonderful. Of course, good and bad people exist everywhere, but overall, I hold deep respect for them. It was in Africa that my journey of healing truly began, away from the abuse that had overshadowed my life in Pakistan. This section is written with as much concern for the people living there as it is for the West and the world at large.

In the regions I'm referring to, virtually all big hospitals, engineering systems, and modern infrastructures are sustained by external skilled labour, primarily from the West, China, India, Pakistan, the Philippines, and others. While this reality is often obscured, it remains an undeniable ground fact, supported by broader global and historical trends. Were there ever an unbiased study on this—though it would likely be heavily censored by globalist

machinery—it would reveal profoundly surprising truths about this phenomenon.

While there are local professionals, doctors, engineers, and others, it remains far from self-sustaining, as most operate under foreign supervision. During my five years there, I cannot recall a single major institution formed or functioning without foreigners in supervisory or oversight roles. There is almost always some form of foreign oversight—whether direct and organizational, which is usually the case, or at best distant or advisory, even in fields that are relatively easy to learn.

Just a couple of small examples, out of virtually every sector, illustrate this dependency. In African countries, majority of power grid construction and maintenance contracts are held by Chinese or other foreign firms, whether USA, Japan, or China[124]. I would be genuinely surprised to find even a single example of a power grid, large modern commercial building, stadium, or shopping mall that was built indigenously. Factories and industries are almost always, not just built, but managed and run by foreign engineers.

Various international development agencies also coordinate this assistance. Whether you look at Kenya or Ethiopia, the Chinese-built Railway projects have been hailed as game-changers; foreign developments. Entire railway infrastructure across Africa seems to be built by China, or other countries[125]. Airports, sea ports, oil refineries,

---

[124] International Energy Agency, Boosting the Power Sector in Sub-Saharan Africa (EN), n.d. https://www.oecd.org/content/dam/oecd/en/publications/reports/2016/08/boosting-the-power-sector-in-sub-saharan-africa_g1g6d840/9789264262706-en.pdf.

[125] Anne Soy, "China's Belt and Road Initiative: Kenya and a Railway to Nowhere," *BBC News,* October 13, 2023, https://www.bbc.co.uk/news/world-africa-67101736.

dams, and other similar mega projects, all have been foreign developments.

And those are large-scale national projects. At the local level, including hospitals, IT systems in luxury hotels, and maintenance engineering within those same establishments, the pattern remains the same. Despite decades of training in these easily replaceable fields, these regions remain heavily dependent on foreign expertise.

I'm talking about the most developed Sub-Saharan countries, such as Nigeria and Kenya. In countries like Burundi, the Central African Republic, and several others, conditions are more primitive even with direct foreign assistance. A country that was loosely considered first-world just a few decades ago, South Africa, is now quickly joining the ranks of the third world, even with foreign assistance. This is common knowledge.

I find myself contrasting this again and again. As the phenomenon above unfolds, the very civilization that made modernity possible and is sustaining it is rapidly shrinking, and being replaced within its own homelands, despite overwhelming opposition from its native populations.

I cannot emphasize enough the consequences this has on the world, on humanity, and on our species as a whole. Beyond the gloom, poverty, and misery this exploding population brings within those very regions, it is on track to make the world as we know it unsustainable and unrecognizable. This is not merely a civilizational or national issue, it carries species-level consequences, and it is unfolding rapidly.

Humanity will not be nearly the same without the thriving brilliance of Western populations, their irreplaceable traditions and culture, and their continued contributions to the human species. Rather than consolidating and solidifying what could rightly be

considered humanity's highest civilizational expression, global effort now appears to be directed toward investment in parallel populations at its expense, including those that consistently rely on this very civilization's generosity and continual support.

To diminish or undermine this inheritance of humanity is not a neutral act. It is to weaken the very foundations upon which our species' identity and progress rest.

Native European fertility stands at around 1.5, while annual net migration is roughly 2 million[126], predominantly from non-European regions. As a result, ethnic Europeans are projected to make up less than half, or at most two third of the populations of France, Germany, and the UK by the year 2100. Of those 2 million net migrants entering the EU each year, the vast majority originate from Africa, the Middle East, and South Asia. Also, population explosions and declines alike are exponential in nature, and the situation becomes unmanageable by 2100, if not much earlier. And this doesn't even account for the additional pressures of artificial wars, pandemics with suspicious origins, and ongoing systemic constant subversion.

The very civilization that set the highest cultural standard is now at risk of being entirely erased. The world as a whole faces the danger of descending into chaos, a state so disordered that even the culprits would have no idea how to navigate it. All the culture, joy, beauty, and tradition, could vanish, leaving behind an artificial, ugly, and numb ecosystem of constant dependence and misery, far worse than words can fully capture. I don't believe I have been able to express the full magnitude of this inevitable catastrophe anywhere in this book. It is a crisis waiting to unfold, one humanity has not faced in tens of thousands of years, one that threatens to destroy life and

---

126 "Eurostat," *Eurostat,* accessed November 10, 2025, https://ec.europa.eu/eurostat/web/interactive-publications/migration-2023.

humanity as we know it, along with the hard-won progress our species has built throughout recorded and pre-recorded history.

MENTAL GYMNASTICS AND THE EROSION OF COMMON SENSE

One of the lessons from this section is that the hostile policies sabotaging vital interests and even survival of Western populations mirror a broader and consistent pattern across nearly every sphere of life: turning clear, commonsense realities into exercises in mental gymnastics. This is precisely how the machinery of subversion wears people down while continuing to advance unimpeded.

Expect a thousand different reasonings against even the most basic logic. This has become pervasive on civilizational level, and it looks like to be one of the most dangerous tactics of this effort.

Under unrelenting manipulation, people begin to doubt even universal truths and basic sense. That doubt is precisely what keeps them trapped, allowing sabotaging influences to continue their harm unchecked and even escalate it. This pattern is a hallmark of this behaviour: creating confusion, denying reality, and forcing others to question their own sanity and moral clarity.

Malicious actors thrive on this. They have nearly boundless energy for deceit, distortion, and justification, something normal individuals, grounded in honesty and conscience, simply cannot match. Every malicious act they advance comes wrapped in endless rationalizations: scientific distortions, "humanitarianism," "economic necessities," and more. The goal is always the same: to drown truth in sophistry.

Without specialized knowledge or training, it can be hard to see through these elaborate reasonings, but once examined closely, most of them collapse due to their absurdity. When exposed, this machinery appears to often double down, using media outrage, smear

campaigns, staged incidents, crime, atrocities, and endless theatrics to cover its tracks.

There are usual alternatives often offered for the patterns discussed in the previous sections. I don't think they deserve a response, but I will briefly list them below, although most of these have already been implicitly covered in this book.

(i) **Ideological convergence among elites rather than coordination:** This does not adequately explain sustained policy alignment against domestic populations across different political systems, nations, parties, and electoral cycles. This should normally fracture under electoral pressure.

(ii) **Moral signalling incentives:** Moral signalling can plausibly explain elite rhetoric, NGO branding, and institutional language. It does not convincingly explain materially self-damaging outcomes implemented at scale and sustained over time. Moral signalling typically optimizes for visibility and reputational gain, while in this case, it does the exact opposite. It should not usually survive when it generates persistent material harm to the signalling group itself. At some point, performative morality gives way to self-preservation. The fact that it does not here raises legitimate questions.

(iii) **Bureaucratic inertia:** What is documented in previous sections is highly energetic intervention abroad and at home, as well as obsessive regulatory enforcement. That is not inertia, that's the polar opposite. Inertia does not explain why alternative policy paths, such as family-centred demographic renewal, are consistently sidelined across countries, while far more complicated policies are

actively pursued instead. Bureaucracies resist change, but they do not usually converge on the same illogical and exclusionary solution everywhere.

(iv) **Risk aversion combined with short-term political calculus:** Risk aversion would predict policies that minimize immediate political damage. Yet many of the policies I have described seem to be at odds with that expected conduct. Open-border dynamics, for example, have repeatedly triggered mass protests, fuelled electoral losses, and disillusioned populations. Short-term political calculus should lead to retreat or moderation. In this case, it does not. This is not how risk-averse behaviour usually functions. The persistence of unpopular policies suggests that other constraints or incentives override electoral risk.

(v) **Path dependence:** Path dependence explains why systems persist after adoption. It does not explain why those systems were chosen or obsessively built in the first place, why corrective alternatives are excluded, and why expansion continues even as negative consequences accumulate. In this case, they are actively deepened, refined, and defended. Path dependence typically erodes when outcomes become visibly counterproductive. The absence of course correction across multiple domains over a prolonged period of time suggests that path dependence is insufficient as an explanation.

(vi) **Activist Influence:** To suggest that elected governments of the world's most powerful nations are repeatedly strong-armed by loosely organized activist groups, such as climate activists, and international development

agencies, stretches logic. Activism alone does not normally override electoral pressure at scale, across decades, and across borders. At minimum, this indicates that activist narratives align with far deeper incentives than usually acknowledged.

Not even the most ideal combination of all these alternative explanations seems to explain the unusual patterns we see today.

Long chains of aligned events are not random. Consistent hostility with pattern is not coincidence. Repeated restrictions across contexts are not accidental. Complexity does not magically self-organize into civilizational-level harm without agency. Incompetent policies alone do not cause sustained convergent damage across domains at the same time.

If some countries in the West started correcting these dynamics, and honest leaders actively start working towards repairing the damages caused to their nations, they will tend to find themselves under pressure, whether it is mainstream media, or other global machinery.

The Entrenched Nature of the Squandering of Western Wealth and Resources

When harmful policies are no longer subtle and public disapproval is simply ignored, deeper questions become unavoidable. The gradual erosion of native existence persists against wishes of Western populations. If such outcomes can be imposed openly, it is naïve to assume the damage ends there. Imagine what else, more hidden, subtle, and covert must be going on.

A deliberate and systematic squandering of Western resources, and the gradual hollowing out of Western economies might be a real and serious issue. Some of this waste might occur through

conventions that are difficult to trace or challenge. Some of these expenditures might originate in good intentions, yet over time they have become vehicles for a massive transfer of wealth overseas on a scale unprecedented in human history.

Hence, this subtle squandering seems to operate less through outright theft and more through entrenched conventions that no longer serve the societies that fund them.

Even well-meaning leaders face a near-impossible challenge: distinguishing what is truly essential from what has simply become entrenched. Aid frameworks like the now-defunct USAID's global programs or the sprawling network of UN-affiliated initiatives, subtle but constant technology proliferation, grants, and capacity-building funds—often look indispensable on paper. Yet collectively they seem to divert unimaginably vast sums of public money out of Western nations annually.

Complicating matters further is the opacity of modern economic governance. Global finance and transnational partnerships are so complex that even honest oversight becomes limited. Decisions that seem minor in isolation—adjustments in trade terms, subsidies, or foreign-aid allocations—can cumulatively redirect trillions of dollars over decades. Each decision could be defended as prudent, each initiative as virtuous, yet the cumulative effect can be the slow depletion of domestic wealth and productive capacity.

Political indifference magnifies the problem. When key decision-makers are possibly influenced, whether by lobbying, ideological alignment, or career incentives within this system, spending patterns can subtly shift from national interest to conformity. These shifts may rarely be visible in a single budget line; but could be embedded in decades of habitual policymaking, shielded by complexity, and legitimized by moral rhetoric. In such an environment, accountability

would fade, and squandering and misappropriation might harden into policy tradition.

When decision-makers are indifferent, the potential for waste becomes limitless. The complexity of modern economics and governance provides endless loopholes to exploit.

Even a leadership committed to reform would struggle to reverse this pattern. The systems themselves might have become deep-rooted, supported by layers of justifications and "best-practice" doctrines. Thus, despite mounting fiscal pressures at home, Western nations seem to persist in funding a vast system that drains their resources.

Artificial Wars

Some wars today appear increasingly artificial. I do not wish to speculate on specific motives, but I do intend to comment on what seems, by all indications, self-evident.

Possibly one of the most self-destructive tendencies of whatever this subversive force may be, is the possibility of persistent killing of innocent people on an industrial scale. Acts of this nature would be a perpetual source of moral and reputational devastation for them if there is even a hint of foul play or irrational pretexts at play. And yet, these actions might have continued for years. It is little wonder, then, that growing resentment and backlash toward such systems have spread across the West and the world in general. Such reactions do not arise in a vacuum; they are the inevitable consequence of covered up atrocities and unacknowledged crimes. But those trapped in their own delusions and blind to consequence, might remain incapable of recognizing the role their own cruelty has played in creating that backlash.

Perhaps such tactics once succeeded in the past, but that does not mean they can continue to work indefinitely. Years-long artificial wars no longer deceive anyone, and people can sense when a conflict is manufactured. And once that realization sets in, the truth becomes unavoidable: these might be orchestrated tragedies, resulting in the mass murder of innocent people. Naturally, people recoil. Recent history offers clear examples, such as the invasion of Iraq, which the world now widely recognizes was built on false premises. The supposed "weapons of mass destruction" never existed[127], and there seems to have been no material benefits. The devastation that followed stands as a reminder of how manipulation at the highest levels can lead to immeasurable human suffering.

There is little justification, on either side, for the ongoing war in Ukraine. Among the countless tragedies it has produced, one of the most disturbing is the forced recruitment of ordinary people who are then sent to die against their will. I remember watching a particular CCTV recording on social media: a man walking his dog, an ordinary day, when a van suddenly pulled up. He tried to flee, but half a dozen men seized him and dragged him away, to war. His dog was left standing on the road, confused, waiting for his best friend who would never return. I watched another haunting scene showing a young man walking beside his mother. A van stops, men leap out, and in front of his terrified mother, he is kidnapped to go get murdered. She clings to him, pleading, but he is torn away and forced into war. In yet another case, a photo of a fallen soldier's broken phone circulated on social media a few months ago, showing his final search history: among his searches was something like 'latest updates on end of war,'

---

[127] Julian Borger, "There Were No Weapons of Mass Destruction in Iraq," *The Guardian,* October 7, 2004, https://www.theguardian.com/world/2004/oct/07/usa.iraq1.

along with a list of similar queries. These are just a few glimpses out of what I would imagine to be thousands more, stories that never reach the surface, that vanish in silence before the world ever learns their names. All of them real. All of them human. And all of them reveal the same truth—this is heartless beyond measure.

None of this is known to happen even in countries across Asia or Africa. Not even regimes as extreme as the Taliban are known to seize ordinary people from the streets to fight against their will. Even the most notorious militant groups in the Middle East do not resort to this. In some nations, conscription or mandatory service exists, but this is something entirely different. This is sometimes even kidnapping, forcing civilians into a war they never chose, sending them to go get murdered.

As you read these words, and as I write them, there is a very real possibility that someone has already been killed. Every single day, hundreds, if not thousands more "soldiers" are dying, many of them not volunteers at all, but civilians forced into battle against their will. A few thousand every week have indeed died on average for years now in this war; it is a statistical fact.

Additionally, Ukraine has suspended its elections as the war continues, denying people the democratic right to decide even the government of their choosing or this very matter, as the strange conflict rages on.

This war makes no sense. In a natural setting, no two nations would continue an intense, mass-casualty war for multiple years with almost nothing to show.

Despite the unending loss of life, both parties remain determined to continue, as if trapped in a cycle with no purpose and no exit. Even from a purely economic standpoint, the devastation defies logic. The

cost in lives, in futures lost, in entire families shattered, is immeasurable.

Continuing the war itself has become the exact opposite of what any war is meant to achieve: the safeguarding of people. Ukraine, for instance, appears determined not to concede even the smallest portion of land, while at the same time engaging in practices that contradict the very purpose of war: protecting its citizens. When a professional army fails to hold ground, the humane course is to preserve lives, not sacrifice them in endless cycles of forced conscription and death. Yet both sides persist, unwilling to yield or even pause.

Even if there were genuine interests at play, they become negligible in the broader context. As the West as a whole, including Russia and Ukraine, is gradually weakened, partly by these very conflicts, and overtaken by other regions in economic strength, demographics, military capacity, technology, and trade, the outcome is not victory for any side but accelerated decline across the board, with the native populations bearing the heaviest costs. What masquerades as short-term gain ultimately erodes the foundational strength of every participant.

I want to emphasise that I hold deep respect for both the Ukrainian and Russian governments and their leadership; both the President Zelenskyy and President Putin. Nothing I have written is meant to assign blame to them, just as I do not blame any other nation. Not that they need it, but whenever an opportunity arises, I would be pleased to advocate for them or for their nations any day. I do not question their motives or their policies, nor do I claim to have studied them in sufficient depth to pass judgment. My aim is the identification of recurring patterns across history and across nations. If anything, my view is that they should be attentive to any sabotaging

influences that may be working to pit them against one another, as this is often how this influence operates. I am advocating for peace above all else, and for the well-being, stability, and long-term interests of both nations and their leaders.

If subversive influence exists within any state, I hope it is recognised and addressed internally. Beyond that, I deliberately refrain from judgment. Political conclusions are for readers to draw.

The Quiet but Visible Attempts at the Systemic Erosion of Western Existence

If we look at any atrocity in modern history, there is sometimes a visible scar, an immediate, devastating loss of life followed by a gradual recovery in the generations that follow. Populations, though wounded, eventually rebuild. What has been unfolding in the West, however, seems fundamentally different. The decline is long-term, sustained, and systemic, and it shows no sign of reversing.

This is a quieter form of destruction: a demographic and cultural erosion happening openly before our eyes and still denied with astonishing shamelessness, even though any credible excuse for dismissal has long since collapsed. Its nature makes it profoundly dangerous, because what can be denied cannot be stopped. And it is denied with obsession: through suppression and persecution.

Even these words, I know they will be met with denial, suppression, deflection, or gaslighting—from mainstream media, from institutions, from the very global mechanisms that sustain this silence. But I believe, deeply, that speaking truth plainly is itself an act of healing and making the global harm unsustainable. Awareness alone can begin to reverse the tide. Calling out harm equals seeking for peace and safety, nothing more.

Those who have committed atrocities have, throughout history, denied them. It is a documented phenomenon, a predictable reflex of the guilty.

Just as subtle economic subversion can prove far more potent and dangerous than outright theft, the quiet mechanisms that increasingly suggest deliberate harm on scale to Western populations are equally far more perilous than open hostility.

Before I go any further, I want to emphasize one crucial point: this must never become a cause for division or hate. The purpose here is protection: to safeguard victim populations from further harm.

The Eventual Reversal of Harm

As depressing it is, it is important to acknowledge that there might be some seriously sinister designs at play against populations across Westen nations. Without fully understanding the sheer amount of damage and real malicious intentions, it will be difficult to meaningfully repair the damage. The malice and subversion against the very existence of an entire group of people across multiple continents, which is something very visible and apparent, is possibly real.

However, this subversive apparatus appears to be hopelessly incompetent and disordered. I will share detailed reasons to make this assertion clearer in the following chapter. You can't expect this kind of unrestrained malice from any sane, intelligent, or rational entity or individual anyway; this is also their weakness. What seems to be extreme injustice against the West over such a long time, one of the extremely unfair things to have happened in the course of human history to any group of people due to its large scale and intensity, will most probably end in a most anti-climactic way. It will likely just dissolve on its own, quietly and fast.

Once that happens, all this injustice will stop and there will be joy, happiness, and justice again in our beautiful world that this entity seems to have destroyed. There will be reversal of every single one of these malicious acts and damages that have been caused to Western nations. Especially, and most importantly by far, the Western populations will grow ever faster, and this decline of birth rates will be reversed. I believe there are already signs of the beginning of the quiet downfall of this apparently organized effort, and I believe the speed at which it will go away forever might even surprise everyone.

The world has probably not seen normalcy, natural course of politics, economics, and culture for a long time.

Once it all goes away, the ugliness that we have taken for granted, the dysfunction that we think is part of a normal life, the prosperity, joy, and freedom that will likely follow on large scale, I fully believe, will be unprecedented. The modern life with all its technology and comfort seems to have unfortunately been accompanied by this malice at the same time so we don't really know how pleasant a normal world could be. We might not know how beautiful life could actually be. There is a lot of joy in the world already, but I feel there is a lot more potential. We only know this world, a circus of a world under the spell of this subversion.

Humanity did not evolve over hundreds of thousands of years, rising from the Stone and Bronze Ages through Greece, Rome, and into the modern era, only to be thrust into a world engineered to degenerate. We cannot permit this destructive force to undo this remarkable civilization.

Chapter 3

The Machinery of Malice: How Highly Organized Psychopathy and Malignant Narcissism Can Shape Civilizational Harm

Whenever I refer to "disordered individuals," "malignant personality disorders," or similar terms throughout this book, I am speaking specifically about psychopathy and narcissistic personality disorder. These two conditions are uniquely associated with the capacity for sustained cruelty, exploitation, and other forms of deeply malignant behaviour. They form the psychological foundation of the patterns I describe in this chapter.

Even though I began observing these patterns unfolding globally more than a decade ago, and even though those patterns have consistently solidified over time, I present the psychological side of observations on current global dysfunction as a working hypothesis.

After all, overly prolonged exposure to a specific, predictable set of emotions and personality traits leaves a mark. If you live with such a personality long enough, and observe it at close range because you were subjected to social isolation throughout that time, you learn to recognize it when you encounter it again.

The malignant disorders in question are clinically known to be highly predictable, and my observations come from watching global patterns unfold, formally studying political science and international relations, immersing myself in history, reading psychology, and exploring political behaviour as a lifelong interest. What I am discussing in this section is not a thought that occurred to me this week, this month, or this year.

The irrational, thoughtless, and destructive character of the patterns described in previous sections is unmistakably malignant, and understanding those dynamics may require exploring malignant behaviour and how it may arise at scale.

With all this in context, I will state again that I present my long-standing reflection on what clearly appears to me to be a harmful psychological pattern operating at a global level, as a working hypothesis.

METHODOLOGICAL FRAMING FOR THE PSYCHOLOGICAL ANALYSIS

This section should be read in direct dialogue with what has already been examined earlier in the book.

For reasons of structure and clarity, I will not restate the scale of harm, destruction, and systemic damage discussed in previous chapters. That record already exists in detail.

What follows is an attempt to examine why and how such harm and policies can arise, persist, and scale far beyond what ordinary political, economic, or strategic explanations can adequately account for.

I therefore ask the reader to keep circling back, mentally and analytically, to the earlier sections as this chapter unfolds. The psychological patterns discussed here are not presented in isolation, nor as abstract theory. They are offered as a possible interpretive lens through which the magnitude, persistence, and asymmetry of the harm already documented may be more clearly understood.

If the actions described earlier appear excessive, irrational, extra-destructive, or wildly disproportionate, that is not incidental. It is precisely this anomaly that the present chapter seeks to address.

Consistent with the analytical framework outlined earlier in the book, psychological explanation is considered here only when harm is persistent, happening across domains, and resistant to correction.

If it fails to illuminate the prior material, it should be rejected. If it clarifies patterns that would otherwise remain inexplicable, it deserves consideration.

Psychological research over the past few decades has advanced considerably beyond popular understanding. With our current knowledge of malignant disorders, it is possible to identify highly consistent patterns of harm and behaviours with notable reliability.

This section draws on that body of knowledge not to moralize, but to explain.

The traits examined in this section are rooted in psychological research, well-documented in clinical literature, and widely recognized by those who have lived through such dynamics.

This chapter might not fully convince everyone. To some, it may feel ambiguous, detailed, or speculative, while to others it may read as highly convincing. This part of the book, however, along with its emphasis on broader mutual understanding, is one I believe will age best.

This is not a diagnosis of world politics, nor of individual public figures.

Environmental Preconditions for Organised and Sustained Large-Scale Malignant Harm

Evidentiary status of claims in this section:
Direct personal experience/observation: ●
Indirect clinical research: ●
Pattern-based inference: ●
External corroboration: ○

We have all heard casual remarks over the years about psychopathic or narcissistic individuals operating at the top of institutions. There has been a quiet collective intuition that has long sensed that malignant personality traits can cause harm on large scales. In my view, those offhand observations contain far more truth than the speakers themselves might realise.

What distinguishes the analysis in this section, however, is the view that such patterns of harm would not, on their own, escalate across civilization and nations in a sustained way. That escalation

suggests additional dynamics at work. This section examines, in detail, the factors, mechanisms, and conditions that could plausibly account for that phenomenon.

Civilizational Harm as a Predictable Emergent Property of Malignant Disorders

I will begin by describing some of the traits of my abusers from my family.

MALICE TO THE POINT OF EXCESS

Both my brothers engaged in what psychologists describe as "triangulation[128]." Our extended family has old rivalries, which is common in villages in Pakistan, and one of them involves a dispute with a distant branch of our cousins due to some bad things they supposedly once did. Between 2006 and 2008, my brothers suddenly developed a new affection for that very branch, even though it would have earned them ire of our own extended family, and the reason was simple: they used them as a tool for triangulation. They would take me to their home against my wish, have their elders question me about my abilities in science, English, mathematics, and Urdu, and then subject me to harsh criticism about my supposed shortcomings compared to their children. At the time I was consistently scoring around 87 percent. Yet to hear my brothers speak, I was the most inadequate person imaginable.

My education soon deteriorated under this pressure. I was barely an adult, and I was surrounded by two hateful brothers. They had countless ways to disrupt my studies, and they used them. My education suffered greatly and never recovered, and I was unable to

---

[128] Cecilia Bahou, "Understanding Narcissistic Triangulation," *Medical News Today,* December 17, 2024, https://www.medicalnewstoday.com/articles/narcissistic-triangulation.

pursue my long-held dreams of becoming a doctor or engineer. Triangulation with immediate cousins and neighbours had already been routine, but because I genuinely liked many of those cousins, my brothers moved further.

Another incident comes to mind. There were some deeply damaging albeit false rumours about an older member of our family due to street politics, and in Pakistan such manufactured rumours amount to a kind of social death. We used to have writings on our house gate, and I would take markers to wipe them off each time. My brothers and my father, instead of showing concern or shame, instead found it funny that it bothered me so much. The individual from outside our family who was connected to those rumours, was invited into our home again and again. He was specifically invited for breakfasts, lunches, and dinners whenever my brothers were around. They would actually go to his home to bring him for meals, and what seemed to me as the purpose was that it affected me so deeply. I specifically talked about it, and I highly disliked that individual and the repeated experience. Still, for my brothers and father, absolutely no shame at all. This continued for a long time.

Individuals of these kinds celebrate what should shame them. For them, targeted hatred matters more than basic self-respect or dignity. It is shocking how easily ordinary concerns fade for these individuals when they focus their malice on a single target. Situations that any healthy individual would consider serious threats to their own well-being or to the dignity of their family become sources of satisfaction for them. I genuinely used to feel as though they were possessed by some entity.

I am not alone in this thought. I have seen people on the internet describe similar experiences, wondering whether such individuals were under the influence of something. I do not actually believe in

possession. That belongs to the supernatural, and it is not something I take literally. Yet their behaviour often crosses into such territory that you do find yourself questioning the limits of human psychopathology if you have lived closely with truly malignant people for long enough. All it takes is one person, one object, one target to frustrate them, and they lose sight of everything else, to the point of self-undoing. This pattern repeated itself in many ways and in many situations in my family, and the example above is only one of them.

I almost omitted the above incident from the book. It looks more like dysfunction rather than a case of abuse. However, to an early teenager, it felt humiliating. I do not intend to speculate to mind-read my abusers, and I am not asserting certainty about their internal motivations. What I do remember is how it felt to me. I deeply felt there was something wrong with this entire ordeal.

This was not an isolated incident. Individuals I disliked, had fallen out with, or wished to distance myself from would suddenly become objects of their focus, even when they barely knew them.

Anyone who has truly known such people understands that hatred and spite pushed to the point of extremes usually dominates in such dynamics.

CONDITIONS REQUIRED FOR SCALING PREDICTABLE HARM

If my own abusers were placed in comparable circumstances, with the exact same context, environment, and conditioning that I will discuss soon, I would see the plausibility of these same outcomes, even without prior example of this worldwide harm.

One among many factors required would be the presence of a proportional number of likeminded enablers, radicalized accomplices, and supporters to match the scale of the harm. On a global level this would simply mean a proportional number of them distributed across

the world. Also, ample time would be required for them to mature within these dynamics, to grow confident, and to feel sufficiently emboldened. Given enough years in such an environment, and some perceived slights from targets, and their behaviour would inevitably become more erratic, more unrestrained, and increasingly malicious.

The most destructive schemes against entire civilizations could become conceivable, and at times, even inevitable.

What accelerates these processes is often shockingly trivial. They watch a dystopian film or crime thriller, seize on a fragment of an idea, and interpret it through their own distorted lens. A few likeminded individuals, already radicalised by similar impulses, validate that impulse. With that small spark of agreement, the scheme quickly transforms into reality, regardless of the consequences for humanity, a civilization, or an entire nation.

These patterns become unmistakably clear when you have spent decades in close proximity to people with such disorders. Whatever is happening to the West, and to humanity by extension, is not unusual in that sense, and I fully believe that this could easily occur.

Many patterns of harm described in earlier sections follow the same mechanical logics and traits of malignant disorders. The reason people have already not spoken about this more openly might be that individuals in Western societies rarely experience and observe prolonged malignant behaviour because of strong legal systems and protective institutions. Those who do experience it are probably often rendered vulnerable and unable to interpret it. Those who are capable of understanding it might struggle to articulate it effectively, partly because they may not follow global events closely enough to recognise the same patterns repeating on a larger scale.

Malignant personality disorders, especially covert and overt narcissism and psychopathy, could lie at the root of this global harm.

Such a profound disregard for basic sense, and lack of any restraint is not something one would expect from a normal human being anyway.

I sometimes used to respectfully explain to my elder brother just how reckless, irrational, and out of touch his thought processes and solutions used to be for his own good. There were many occasions where I succeeded in convincing him out of reckless ideas. For a long time, I remained loyal to my family despite abuse, rationalising their behaviour, and later I spent years caught between loyalty and disillusionment as I watched their dysfunction grow. Eventually I realised there was no hope left. I could sometimes deter them from overtly or covertly harming others, and even from harming themselves through their own destructive impulses, but there was no one who could deter them from repeating those very same patterns against me. If I had stood beside them unconditionally, encouraging rather than confronting them, they would have spiralled into far worse malice long ago.

FROM THE FAMILY TO THE BEYOND

Generally, disordered individuals are sometimes able to influence families, groups, and eventually even small communities. Their ascent usually begins at home. First, they might succeed with immediate family, then with relatives, with friends, and from there the influence usually expands outward. Once they secure loyalty and compliance from those closest to them, the path opens for further manipulation: false stories that pit individuals against one another. In extreme cases, if this becomes a group dynamic, they might even create narratives of

entitlement, superiority, grandiosity[129], manufactured victimhood[130], each reflecting individual-level disordered traits amplified into collective forms and serving as widely familiar mechanisms for binding followers to the dysfunction. Such a dynamic can take root and refine itself through decades, and even centuries or more, and can even harden into ideologies.

Psychological research shows precisely how these disorders take firm root in families and tend to pass through generations through genetic and environmental factors. I will explore that in detail in the *Childhood Angle of Malignant Personality Disorders* section soon.

Individuals with these disorders have an intense need to control every variable within their reach. This becomes a crucial factor in ensuring that nothing they achieve feels sufficient. However, thankfully in most cases, there seem to be hard natural limits—they rarely escalate beyond their immediate environment. But the impulse is always there. The very nature of these disorders is primed to scale without limits if they are given the right goldilocks conditions, the set of ideal circumstances and sufficient time, in which they can grow and entrench themselves unnoticed. In those rare and ideal conditions, their malice does not stop at one village, one city, or even one nation as their network expands.

---

[129] Charles A O'Reilly and Nicholas Hall, "Grandiose Narcissists and Decision Making: Impulsive, Overconfident, and Skeptical of Experts-but Seldom in Doubt," *Personality and Individual Differences* 168 (January 2021): 110280, https://doi.org/10.1016/j.paid.2020.110280.

[130] Julie L. Hall, "The Narcissist's Airtight Victim Narrative," *Psychology Today,* March 5, 2023, https://www.psychologytoday.com/gb/blog/the-narcissist-in-your-life/202303/the-narcissists-airtight-victim-narrative.

This is a defining psychological trait of malignant disorders, and psychologists often highlight the intense need for control[131] as one of the most dangerous features of such personalities.

They also impulsively resort to crimes, staged incidents, and acts of intimidation[132] and confusion to silence disagreement and perceived disrespect, which is sometimes another key reason for the maintenance and gradual consolidation of their successes. Again, these are clinically established traits[133].

Additionally, malignant personalities cannot rest and sit still for long, and these individuals usually possess a seemingly unlimited level of relentless energy that they reserve for malicious pursuits, especially if it gives them a sense of grandiosity or emotional supply. Combine that with early successes in shaping their families or social circles, and the influence grows steadily. If left unchecked, as mentioned before, it can even embed itself across generations as each one internalises, nurtures, and perpetuates the same destructive behaviours and ideologies.

When a delusional person first starts expressing dangerous ideas, they are almost always stopped by their horrified family. But in rare cases if the family is gullible or compromised enough to accept those ideas, and then friends accept them, and then enough people follow, the abnormal becomes normal. The individuals become validated by

---

131 "Narcissistic Personality Disorder: Guide for Providers at McLean Hospital," accessed December 18, 2025, https://www.mcleanhospital.org/npd-provider-guide.

132 Charlie Health Editorial Team, "Things Narcissists Say In An Argument (& What They Really Mean)," *Charlie Health,* September 8, 2023, https://www.charliehealth.com/post/things-narcissists-say-in-an-argument-and-what-they-really-mean.

133 Rebecca Lee, "The Ties Between Crime and Malignant Narcissism," *Psych Central,* August 18, 2017, https://psychcentral.com/blog/the-ties-between-crime-and-malignant-narcissism#1.

those around them, and to outsiders they can even appear sophisticated and regular.

It is worth noting that the patterns of harm described earlier in the book do not span a few years. They extend back decades, and in some cases more than a century. Therefore, entertaining the possibility of something organized that may extend to centuries, becomes necessary.

For the influence to have gradually scaled from scratch to eventually perpetrate those patterns, it would have taken additional time, probably decades or centuries more to grow.

THE NATURAL HARD LIMITS AND THE SHEER RARITY

It is important to again recognise that most disordered networks formed through acquaintances, friendships, or small social circles never escalate beyond their immediate environment. In almost all cases, the dysfunction remains confined to a household or a friend group. I have never witnessed anything approaching a global escalation in real time. Even in my own life, the pattern I observed within my family only managed to extend to a semi-village level, and although my brother did cultivate some provincial-level alliances, it never translated into anything larger.

The apparent absence of multiple competing forces of similar scale suggests just how extraordinarily rare this phenomenon must be. Furthermore, because such disorders operate at the extreme end of an all-or-nothing, black-or-white spectrum[134], once a force of this kind consolidates power, it does not tolerate rivals. Any competition in such a scenario would likely trigger immediate uncompromising reaction before it could take shape. This mirrors how such individuals behave at the personal level: they are fundamentally incapable of

---

[134] Arlin Cuncic, "What Is Narcissistic Rage?," *Verywell Mind*, May 27, 2021, https://www.verywellmind.com/what-is-narcissistic-rage-5183744.

being at peace with real or perceived threats. Competition is experienced not as rivalry, but as existential danger. Our current psychological understanding attests to these very traits and behaviours.

In environments where this dynamic becomes dominant, crime and atrocity are not aberrations. They are the natural outcome of a system structured around zero-sum control and pre-emptive enmity. This trait alone could plausibly explain several patterns we see today.

SHARED NARCISSISTIC SUPPLY AND THE BREAKING OF THE CRUCIAL BARRIER

As for how it might have internally unified at scale, and escalated globally, I will first note that individuals with these disorders often clash with one another[135]. They are not usually natural allies to each other. They sometimes tend to team up when covertly and overtly malicious individuals meet to complement each other's flaws. They also definitely do when they have a shared target or a goal and so on.

From my observation, however, even a shared target does not lead to more than a few of them to organise into an all-encompassing alliance. Furthermore, the observed natural limitation discussed earlier is also aided by the fact that these individuals tend to end up self-destructing[136]; again, a clinical observation. As a result of these factors, they tend not to escalate beyond a certain threshold, almost all of the time.

---

[135] Andy Levesque, "What Happens When Two Narcissists Are in a Relationship? - Circles," *Circlesup,* December 22, 2024, https://circlesup.com/blog/two-narcissists-in-a-relationship/.

[136] Simine Vazire and David C Funder, "Impulsivity and the Self-Defeating Behavior of Narcissists," *Personality and Social Psychology Review: An Official Journal of the Society for Personality and Social Psychology,* Inc 10, no. 2 (2006): 154 - 65, https://doi.org/10.1207/s15327957pspr1002_4.

There may be several unique dynamics at work today that have succeeded in persisting in scaling globally in a way that ordinarily would not be possible. Something worked that normally doesn't work. Something statistically miraculous and terrifying has apparently happened, and we could be witnessing that right now. The global harm I discussed in earlier chapters, is the price the humanity and the West might be paying for that.

One plausible factor might lie in the propensity of individuals with these disorders for proxy narcissistic supply and shared grandiosity.

Narcissistic supply[137] refers to the external psychological input such as admiration, fear, attention, compliance, or conflict that individuals with narcissistic or related malignant personality disorders depend upon to stabilize their sense of self.

I have observed a crude version of proxy supply firsthand. My father, for example, has always derived much of his grandiosity and narcissistic supply through my malignant brother, who functioned as a proxy and amplifier.

In such conditions, what would normally collapse under internal rivalry can instead solidify into an organized system. Shared schemes and group projects become sources of collective narcissistic supply, allowing the group to function with discipline, persistence, and coordination. Psychologically, this is not only plausible but coherent and often a common observation.

The patterns themselves point to the possibility that, for the first time, such a disorder at scale might have broken free of every natural limitation and is now operating unchecked at a global level. I believe

---

[137] Darlene Lancer, "The Concept of Narcissistic Supply," *Psychology Today,* August 7, 2021, https://www.psychologytoday.com/gb/blog/toxic-relationships/202108/the-concept-of-narcissistic-supply.

the dysfunction we see today; it would plausibly not be possible without this dynamic. The world or the West would not suffer like this in normal conditions. I fail to see or picture any other rational explanation.

WHEN THE STATISTICALLY UNTHINKABLE BECOMES REAL

Yes, it is remarkable how far such psychopathology might have reached in the world today, how long it could have sustained its harmful influence, and how deeply it might have penetrated global affairs, yet none of it surprises me. My own experiences have shown me how limitless the energy of these disorders can be, how unrestrained they are in pursuing harm, and how persistent they remain even when the path forward is irrational or self-destructive.

As I said, their success can build slowly, over many years or even centuries or more in cases of generational, fuelled by their relentless drive to dominate. That does not make them competent or wise, because in truth they are neither. The scale of their impact only reflects how unchecked malignant behaviour can grow once it finds an opening. In isolation, this would be no different from listening to deranged ramblings from a known unstable individual of the family, the kind that would normally be dismissed as a burden or a headache.

Not everyone within this possible subversive structure would need to be personality disordered. However, if this is indeed the reality, many most probably will be. I believe the proportion will almost certainly be exponentially higher than in normal populations, and those individuals would hold countless others captive to false narratives and misguided convictions through coercion, false stories of grandiosity, superiority, or victimhood, and so on.

Additionally, they are well known for their resistance to personal growth. Reflection is often rejected, and behavioural change is resisted rather than embraced. Malignant personality disorders such

as narcissism are notoriously difficult to treat[138] and are generally understood to persist throughout life.

Global Harm Born from Careless Fantasies

Because this one trait or habit among many is pervasive and it has far-reaching effects, it is worth repeating: it is shocking just how little it takes for the most harmful schemes to emerge within disordered individuals without much reflection on their long-term implications for themselves, the world, or humanity. Recklessness, impulsivity[139], pointlessness, poor-long term decision making, and related by-product behaviours are clinically established when it comes to malignant personality disorders. My brothers could take half a sentence out of context from a five-hundred-page book and use it to construct damaging ideas. I genuinely used to think that disordered individuals should be banned from watching crime, dystopian, or similar films. Some high-functioning ones read too, but when they read, they take a single line or fragment and go completely nuts with it. That is how little it takes.

You could expect the world to be sabotaged and subverted in the most destructive ways, atrocities committed, and you would be shocked to discover how trivial and careless the origins of those actions often are. They are not driven by any decent purpose, even though they may tell themselves otherwise. Beneath the veil of possibly noble-sounding ideals would usually lie something trivial.

---

[138] Toketemu Ohwovoriole, "Can a Narcissist Change?," *Verywell Mind,* August 11, 2023, https://www.verywellmind.com/can-a-narcissist-change-7567893.
[139] Malin K. Hildebrandt et al., "Impulsivity Mediates the Association between Narcissism and Substance-Related Problems beyond the Degree of Substance Use: A Longitudinal Observational Study," *BMC Psychiatry* 24, no. 1 (2024), https://doi.org/10.1186/s12888-024-05718-y.

Additionally, such individuals often rationalise and legitimise crime-prone behaviour through elaborate theories that extend beyond simple entitlement or grandiosity. They may believe they "understand" truths others cannot, yet under scrutiny these claims collapse into ridiculous justifications for their actions. If harm of this scale is indeed persistent, such rationalisations would be inevitable, and their role should not be understated. This phenomenon is especially common in highly organized cult systems, and is also an observation in criminal studies, and incarceration-related researches.

How Disordered Minds Operate in a Different Moral Reality

This section may be somewhat repetitive. I appreciate your patience.

These disorders operate in what can only be described as a parallel moral reality, one where the norms and decencies that guide ordinary people simply do not apply (even though for some warped reason they tend to believe they're morally superior[140]). This creates a dangerous asymmetry. Behaviours that would repel any healthy individual are precisely the behaviours these individuals are clinically recognised to delight in.

This parallel realm almost always remains uncontested for the disordered individuals, and every success in their distorted world reinforces their delusions of superiority. As a result, even incompetent individuals can rise simply because they face no competition in the realm of shamelessness. Malicious tactics work for them. It starts small; being shameless, being relentless in chasing

---

[140] Eric W. Dolan, "Narcissists, Psychopaths, and Sadists Often Believe They Are Morally Superior," *PsyPost Psychology News,* August 21, 2024, https://www.psypost.org/narcissists-psychopaths-and-sadists-often-believe-they-are-morally-superior/.

something even after being repeatedly told "no," and once that proves effective, it gradually escalates into fully malicious conduct. When you have no brakes, when you do not flinch at indecency, you achieve goals that healthy people would never even consider pursuing. And once those tactics gain traction—once friends, allies, or enablers join in—the momentum, from my observations, grows surprisingly quickly. What begins as shamelessness expands into something far darker. These indecent behaviours become a private norm within that parallel reality, concealed from the outside world, and plausibly, in this case that we see, violently covered up, and increasingly entrenched.

We see these patterns globally. What horrifies normal people seem to be, in that world, a source of indifference at best, and delight at worst. My personal experience makes me believe latter is the more likely case. The tactics are sometimes desperate, sometimes vicious and cruel, and always devoid of dignity. Crimes, subversions, and atrocities globally that we see today, could all be part of this dynamic. And once committed, they require further crimes, atrocities, threats, staged crimes, and further intimidation to cover them up or to negotiate their continuation. None of this resembles the behaviour of any normal person or normal entity. Healthy individuals almost always choose dignity and care for human suffering over indecency and widespread cruelty. These individuals apparently do not. Their parallel reality rewards the opposite.

Individuals with these disorders often direct an intense focus toward others, sometimes toward agonising them, whereas most people are occupied with their work, sources of joy, and everyday responsibilities. When observed more closely, such individuals frequently display striking levels of incompetence in productive domains, which tends to lead them to gravitate toward targeting

others rather than engaging in constructive or competitive pursuits. One might contrast this with ordinary, capable individuals going about their lives and contributing to broader progress, while an opposing force remains fixated solely on them.

In everyday interpersonal contexts, this dynamic may appear limited in scope. However, when organised and scaled across larger systems, it can produce deeply destabilising asymmetries.

Clinicians and researchers consistently describe the noted presence of a profound inner "bottomless emptiness[141]" at the core of these disordered personalities, an emptiness that is temporarily masked through narcissistic supply, among other things. Feeling of emptiness is also widely reported to occur in non-malignant conditions such as depression. However, in malignant disorders it is thought to be "most intense and almost constant.[142]"

This is not a fringe interpretation. It is a standard explanation within psychological literature, supported both by long-term clinical observation and by the self-reporting of affected individuals themselves.

Another observation often discussed by clinicians and psychologists is that even though they spin grandiose stories about themselves, somewhere beneath the surface they know the truth. They cannot seem to sit alone with their own thoughts for long because of the said emptiness and because the internal contradiction becomes unbearable. This is also why they react with such disproportionate violence, psychologically termed as *narcissistic rage,* when they are made to feel ridiculous or ashamed. The intolerance

---

[141] "High Level Narcissists - Their Bottomless Well of Psychological Emptiness," accessed December 22, 2025, https://thenarcissistinyourlife.libsyn.com/high-level-narcissists-their-bottomless-well-of-psychological-emptiness.
[142] Ibid.

toward shame is another one of the most consistent and defining traits of malignant disorders[143].

I understand that to a casual reader who has never had the misfortune of witnessing these disorders up close, some of what I describe may start to sound absurd, even exaggerated, as if I were simply venting. But the uncomfortable truth is that every one of these traits, no matter how extreme or unbelievable they may seem, is clinically documented consistency, and is widely discussed in psychological literature. They are not casual claims. They are backed by decades of research across psychology, neuroscience, and behavioural science.

I encourage readers to look into any trait or pattern I mention in this chapter. Search the internet, read psychology texts, watch educational channels, look at research papers, or listen to victims and clinicians who have spent years studying these disorders. There are tonnes of YouTube channels, for one example, run by psychologists and survivors alike with millions of survivors among their followers. You will find the same descriptions repeated again and again. Psychologists, researchers, survivors, and educators consistently highlight the very behaviours I am outlining here. The consistency of these accounts is not a coincidence. It is a reflection of how predictable, recognisable, and disturbingly uniform these disorders truly are.

Translate this dynamic over decades, or even centuries or more, and you find this second reality evolving alongside the normal one. A hidden world built on shameless tactics, broad hostility, and escalating malice. If a decent person were to adopt such tactics, they would

---

[143] Joseph Burgo Ph.D., "Narcissism and Other Defenses Against Shame," *Psychology Today,* November 17, 2012, https://www.psychologytoday.com/gb/blog/shame/201211/narcissism-and-other-defenses-against-shame.

succeed instantly, because life becomes far easier once you stop caring about morality, dignity, or restraint. But decent people don't do it. It is the disordered, the incompetent, who step into that void, and although they cannot match the capability of genuinely competent individuals, their relentless energy compensates. And because normal people never compete in this domain, these individuals eventually tend to find openings to creep upward—first into the affairs of individuals, then organisations, and eventually, as we now see, maybe even into the affairs of nations and civilizations. Add some generational medium, an ideology—social, political, religious, cultural, familial—and this dynamic gets nurtured and permeated, something that doesn't take place in isolated cases of these disorders.

This is how disordered individuals can outmanoeuvre healthier people in systems not designed to defend against such behaviour. Of course, they then build on it and once capable enough, thwart such attempts or defensive mechanisms from taking shape, with crimes, threats, and so on being their favourite and apparently effective tools to silence people trying to defend systems.

The academic literature is clear: individuals with certain personality disorders can and do ascend to high positions, not despite their shamelessness and heartlessness, but because of it[144].

A Contradiction at Play

From my observation of this machinery, I have seen a striking contradiction in both its personality and behaviour, a contradiction that might play a role in exposing it.

---

144 Arash Emamzadeh, "Why Narcissists Get Promoted So Quickly," *Psychology Today,* October 25, 2021, https://www.psychologytoday.com/gb/blog/finding-a-new-home/202110/why-narcissists-get-promoted-so-quickly.

For something whose main strength could be its shadowy tactics and plausible deniability, it seems to have been remarkably careless in maintaining either of them. This carelessness is rooted in the very nature of its apparent personality, a nature that aligns closely with the disorders I have associated it with.

From the observed patterns, whatever it might be, it has shown a persistent blindness to reality, and it seems to continue its tactics to such an extent that it not only exposes itself but makes its ongoing cruelty, malice, and high disregard for basic logic and consequences all the more naked. Whenever it is called out, it seems to double down, a behaviour that would consistently work against its own long-term interests.

Psychologists have long noted that the tendencies to escalate beyond ability to manage consequences are defining features of these disorders. A long history of similar patterns in some of the most notorious tyrannies in the past, which will be discussed later in this book, also point to the same tendencies.

Misinterpreted as Genius, Fuelled by Malignant Disorders

If my hypothesis of organized harm is indeed true, then what may seem like "strategic brilliance" from the outside is, in truth, nothing more than the natural evolution of unrestrained malice when granted power, resources, and time. A mentally unstable individual can disorient anyone on a personal level; now, that same disorder might be operating on a global scale. That would not make it some omnipotent evil. Even thinking about it that way, I believe, is laughable. We often imagine the culprits of grand schemes to be sophisticated masterminds, but they are anything but. The only difference is that they might have had decades, perhaps more than a century, to refine and perfect their clumsy methods.

Over time, their relentless urge to dominate would compel them to upgrade methods—censorship would grow subtler, influence operations more layered, subversion more sophisticated, and systems of control increasingly compartmentalized and proxied.

None of this would require "brilliance" in the cognitive, moral, or noble sense. It wouldn't be creativity or excellence in the service of progress; it would be manipulation in service of delusions of superiority and other dangerous mix of emotions and ideologies. The disordered wouldn't recognize true progress, nor could they achieve a lot of it even if they tried.

These people would be, quite simply, broken. Recognizing this wouldn't be about condemnation; it would be about freeing humanity from a false narrative. If we presume that this indeed is the reality, then once we see them for what they truly are, not omnipotent masterminds, but deeply flawed individuals whose power has far exceeded their wisdom, then genuine repair, progress, and balance become possible.

The world is burning because, for some reasons, unprecedented amount of power might have fallen into the hands of those least fit to wield it responsibly. These would not be the figures to glorify or emulate, they would be the individuals who would, frankly, need help, not authority over the fate of billions. What they would truly need would be therapy and years of professional care before they could become healthy, self-reflecting, constructive members of society. These disorders are notoriously difficult to treat, but it is still not an impossible task.

As I stated before, even history's worst tyrants had moments of restraint, some boundary to their cruelty. These patterns, however, seem to lack any inhibition whatsoever. The only thing restraining these patterns now appears to be the fear of exposure and

accountability. Without the West, and without that fear, such a force could, seeing its character, unleash a form of open tyranny unlike anything humanity has ever seen. We can already see clear signs of that tyranny—subtle, covert, yet unmistakably present, and growing more erratic as time passes.

A Possible Monetary Ecosystem

Here is one speculative framework worth considering, among others.

There may exist an ecosystem that, paradoxically, renders this entire dynamic more human rather than less so, and one can reasonably hope that this is the case. If it is, it increases the prospects of mutual understanding and improves the chances of eventual resolution.

If we assume, for the sake of analysis, that an apparatus exists, which has somehow, found an opening to global power, has sustained it, nurtured it, and grown it ever since, and which is now powerful enough to covertly drive a wide range of highly unpopular policies and decisions across Western nations, nations that happen to be amongst the most powerful on earth, then it becomes necessary to examine its immediate human interests and monetary benefits. After all, unchecked power rarely goes unused for personal gains.

Examining this dimension of the apparent malice may illuminate additional mechanisms, answer unresolved questions, and potentially surface solutions that might otherwise remain overlooked.

It is important to begin by emphasizing that this concerns patterns, not individuals. In similar circumstances, most people would likely behave in comparable ways. The aim here is not moral condemnation, but an attempt to understand how human behaviour operates under certain conditions, to understand one another, and to

approach the subject with compassion. Viewed this way, the framework humanizes everyone involved.

We cannot assume that everyone operating within even the most dysfunctional environments, such as the possible subversive machinery I have been hypothesising, will be malignant or cruel. Many individuals would be no different from you or me, doing their best, adapting, and living their lives within an ecosystem they happened to find themselves in.

Within such a dynamic, one could reasonably distinguish between two broad groups: a large, highly malignant, malicious, and radicalized core that I have so far discussed in detail, and even a wider circle of loyal beneficiaries.

In theory, if there is an apparatus which is that influential, it could have affiliated individuals installed into powerful and lucrative positions, have states confer roles that generate substantial wealth, or facilitate outright transfer of vast resources. It could intimidate, coerce, manipulate, or compromise private businesses for takeovers, steal ideas, or pressure judicial systems and watchdogs to overlook large-scale financial or economic theft and fraud. These are only illustrative examples. The range of possibilities would be enormous and limitless.

When individuals are willing to employ intimidation, criminality, and coercion in a coordinated manner, while operating inside otherwise law-abiding Western societies, and somehow recurringly succeed and get away with them, rapid and disproportionate ascent becomes almost inevitable.

In that scenario, if you as a group put your mind to taking over or coercing any particular organization, business, or even government for that matter, you would rarely find individuals standing up against sustained coercion especially when death threats are at play. We do

see threats and even crimes against principled leaders throughout recent history, I do not need to cite those historical trends at all.

Given enough time, large businesses and corporations are bound to get gradually captured or at least coerced and intimidated. This trajectory appears increasingly plausible today, across major corporations, mainstream media, entertainment industries, and other influential institutions.

If we accept that this phenomenon is even plausibly real, it adds another layer of explanation for why large-scale crime sprees and mass atrocities are so prevalent today. A system shaped by intimidation and coercion would know no other operating logic.

Such dynamics could give rise to a highly profitable ecosystem, one capable of generating extraordinary wealth for those within it, including individuals with good intentions.

In that scenario, many of those individuals would be content. They would enjoy the material comfort and security afforded by the system and would likely become loyal to it, understandably so, as most people would under similar circumstances.

If even a minor threat were perceived against such a money-generating ecosystem, particularly when awareness can spread rapidly and trigger systemic collapse, it is plausible that the system and people within it as a whole would take serious offense.

As admitted previously, such a dynamic would not occur under normal conditions. If it was easy to establish, we would see it widespread across the world, which we do not. Its rarity suggests that it would require unusually specific conditions to emerge and persist, conditions that I have touched upon earlier. Further, a foundational system of belief, also discussed prior, could serve as the binding force that holds it together and allows it to become self-sustaining and relentless.

When all this is combined: targeted indoctrination, the view that others are hostile, powerful incentive structures, and paranoia, whether organic or manufactured, self-correction becomes nearly impossible.

There is a strong likelihood that deeply entrenched malignant personality disorders could be involved as the central actors. The ruthless and malignant core can act as the engine, creating opportunities through influence and coercion, suppressing threats to accumulated power, and operating under ideologies of entitlement, grandiosity, and superiority. The second group could then occupy the opportunities created, becoming loyal beneficiaries who feed resources, influence, power, and legitimacy back into the core, further strengthening it. In this way, power, wealth, and influence grow continuously and reinforce themselves.

Life becomes easier when shortcuts are available. Success no longer requires the same effort as it does for ordinary people. This does not imply exceptional intelligence or ability on the part of individuals involved. In many cases, it suggests the opposite. Such systems tend to cultivate incompetence or mediocrity by design, with genuine excellence becoming rare. It is a common observation that environments structured around shortcuts often correlate with pervasive fraud and related tactics. The personality disorder discussed earlier is particularly prone to repeated engagement in such behaviours.

I have no inherent objection to wealth, shortcuts, or incentive structures. Good for them. It becomes a severe concern, however, when it deliberately starts diminishing and undermining its host civilization and the wider world.

If this hypothetical system is, in fact, real, then one out of several solutions would be that the civilization could explore competing in

the same way, copying the same ecosystem and implementing it within its own people, people with actual ability and competence. By saturating the environment, the original ecosystem could in theory gradually lose its exclusivity and sustainability. As incentives diminish, entrenched mindsets that defend harmful patterns may begin to loosen. Over time, the system could dissolve. I'm not too sure if this would be practical at all, but just a possibility worth consideration. The results would not be quick.

There could be another gradual path forward. If this scenario turned out to be real, the West could consciously allow this wealth generation to continue along similar lines for a defined period, enabling the ecosystem to transition organically toward less shortcut-driven modes of operation. If such dynamics have existed for a long time, allowing a deliberate and managed continuation may be the least disruptive way to unwind them.

However, one possible solution might not be enough. Multiple measures and safeguards will have to be in place to ensure recovery from the damages caused to Western nations, measures that will be discussed in *Chapter 4*.

A Realistic Possibility for Peace and Course Correction

The preceding section, "A Possible Monetary Ecosystem," which roughly spans the last 5-6 pages, explores a working hypothesis that represents a greater interpretive leap than I am fully comfortable with. It should therefore be read strictly as a speculative exercise.

The analysis that follows does not depend on that framework, nor does it build upon it. Instead, this section returns to the patterns, evidence, and dynamics discussed immediately earlier in the book. That hypothetical lens was introduced to broaden the range of possible interpretations, not to function as a foundational premise.

There is hope. Just as I sometimes used to try to guide my own family away from harmful choices, this global harm can be averted that way. People who are close to those who could be causing the harm can educate them and encourage them to walk a better path. Those close to them and the rest of humanity stand on the same side. There are no real sides here. Even the individuals who are deeply delusional or disordered remain part of us. They wouldn't know any other way. This is simply how the water flows. Anyone else, with the same inner disorder and placed in the same circumstances, would behave in exactly the same manner.

The West and the rest of humanity want an end to the harm. This book is a plea for the cessation of harmful actions. That is all that the West, the world, and everybody normal wants. I would like to appeal to the peaceful factions or any moderate forces within the possible perpetrators of harm to please encourage a change in direction, because what is possibly happening increasingly seems to be far worse than most people can imagine. I have reasons to believe that nothing like this could have occurred in human history.

Even the worst tyrants who horrified historians for millennia for committing harms for tiny reasons did it in a limited manner. What we see today is beyond comparison. And worse, it does not end there. For reasons that are predictable once one understands how malignant personalities operate, they seem to have taken upon themselves a foolish task of erasing an entire group of people, the very same people who have driven human progress until now and continue to do so. The scale and recklessness of what is happening is almost impossible to comprehend.

And what happens when someone pleads with them to come to their senses? The answer would be threats and intimidation. What happens when entire victim populations beg for the harm to stop?

Threats aimed at hundreds of millions of people with what increasingly seems to be artificial wars, false flag operations, terrorism, and so on. Human history and literature, fiction and nonfiction alike, are littered with examples of disordered individuals spiralling further into destructive behaviour and, in the process, making themselves appear as the absolute embodiment of evil. We are at a stage where, if this escalation continues, the situation might turn into a clear good versus evil scenario. I do not want anyone to reach that point. I do not want anyone to look evil. We can resolve everything easily if there is a pause and a change in direction.

Those perpetrating harm have that opportunity now. This book and more gives the space to pause and rethink the path. I have pleaded on their behalf throughout these pages, asking everyone to forgive and let the past go. They should not push things to a point where I, and everyone who has spoken about the harms they seemingly have caused to humanity, end up being proven right in the darkest possible way.

Whatever covert operations took place in the past are already done and dusted. Evil schemes against Western populations are no longer hidden anymore. I admit they were effective at one time. They will not fool anyone anymore. Those behind the harmful actions should recognise this moment for what it is and change course while they still can. To those close to the perpetrators, this burden lies on the perpetrators, not on innocent people who are only asking for an end to harm. If they continue to escalate as if some madness is driving them, do not blame those who keep calling for peace and safety, and are standing up against violent patterns. Blame deflection will not work anymore. The time has come to change direction and to learn peaceful and normal ways of acting in the world.

I fully believe that this shift can and will come from within. I think an internal change among those involved is one of the strongest possibilities, and everything will most probably return to normal as if nothing had happened.

In novel series *A Song of Ice and Fire*, there was a deranged king named Joffrey Baratheon. His entourage was once moving through his capital city when a starving peasant, in irritation, hurled a lump of cow dung at the procession. Enraged, the king ordered his knights to kill them all and to bring him the man's head. His entourage was tiny compared to the vast crowd gathered there, and they barely escaped the chaos that followed. I remember vividly what the king's uncle told him after that debacle. "They were hungry and asking for food, and you ordered them to be killed, you bloody vicious fool!" The boy gets slapped and all that in that scene. This is also on the TV adaptation, *Game of Thrones,* Season 2 probably. This pattern is familiar across literature and history. Civilizations everywhere have recorded their deranged rulers who spiralled out of control, issuing threats and committing criminal sprees without restraint. Whoever the subversive perpetrators may be today, surely they do not wish to continue in that direction. They could have already surpassed every tyrant of the past in scale and recklessness, yet they can still change course now.

In *A Song of Ice and Fire* universe, they had another mad king. He was literally called the mad king. He was a fan of ordering the murder of people for protesting against his increasingly erratic behaviour. He ended up alienating everyone and causing the overthrow of a 300-year-old dynasty. Just before his capital city was about to fall, he ordered his pyromancer to destroy the entire city, burn everyone in it by setting a highly reactive compound on fire he had stored throughout city. *Burn them all,* he kept shouting until the very end. I will explore more *mad kings* in the following sections of this book.

People close to those causing civilizational harm or the moderate factions within them need to deter them from continuing to walk this destructive path.

One of the most unfortunate aspects of this entire situation is the possibility that innocent people, people who are every bit as remarkable and worthy as the rest of us, may be caught in the middle of this dynamic. Some may be connected to the wrongdoers only by proximity, by circumstance, or by loyalty to family or community. I understand that, from their perspective, my words might sound harsh or even heartless, though that is not my intention. The scale of the injustices inflicted upon the West are extreme and immense, and speaking honestly about them is necessary if recovery and clarity are ever to follow. Without this honesty, even those innocent people on the other side may never fully understand the reality of what has been unfolding.

This book, with all its direct language and unfiltered exposition, was deliberately written out of what I perceive to be extreme necessity, not malice. I wrote it over several months, often at the expense of my own peace and welfare, because remaining silent would have been worse.

For an extended period, I limited my movements to essential supplies. I did not know if I would make it back. This was not paranoia, but a response to lived reality, which will be addressed soon. For more than eight months at least, I did not go beyond my immediate neighbourhood or the local post office. Under constant pressure, I made a deliberate decision: I would not venture further until this book was finished. If something were to happen, at least the message would already be written.

People do not take such risks or place themselves in such vulnerable positions from a place of hatred. They do it from a place

of concern. My concern is not only for the Western nations, but also for those innocent individuals who may unknowingly find themselves within the circle of the forces responsible for the unnecessary civilization-wide harms.

Throughout the writing of this book, I have remained conscious of how it might be received by them. I have thought carefully for so many times about how my words might sound to them. If any part of it reads as harsh, I would stress that it is not driven by emotion, but by a belief that at least one account such as this book must speak plainly. I understand that strong words or terms used here should not be taken as final judgments. What appears destructive may, in part, be defensive reactions that have escalated well beyond control. I will compensate for this in the future. In this one instance, in this book, however, clarity and urgency take precedence. In time, it will be followed by efforts toward balance, repair, mutual understanding, and reconciliation on my part.

I know deeply that the West, as a civilization, would never blame or endanger innocent people, even in the face of the extraordinary suffering it has endured. It would be a failure of the West and the humanity itself if it were to occur, but I know it won't. That is not its character. It does not scapegoat innocent people. It does not generalise. It does not inflict harm on those who bear no responsibility. Perhaps malicious actors might have attempted, through propaganda or manipulation, to paint a different picture, and to poison minds or twist narratives. But the truth is simple: myself included, and this entire civilization I speak for, hold genuine compassion for every innocent person, on every side. My empathy extends to them as much as my immense respect and empathy extends to this remarkable civilization, the West.

I will further explore the necessity for mutual understanding and total forgiveness in the *solutions* chapter of the book.

AN IMPORTANT NOTE

There is extensive propaganda directed at certain honest leaders in Western nations. Among the most dishonest narratives deployed against them is the casual and weaponized use of the term "narcissist."

Having witnessed this condition up close, I reject that label outright. Confidence is not narcissism. A refusal to entertain nonsense is not narcissism. Responding firmly to unending irrational resentment is not narcissism. These are not psychological pathologies, they are signs of resolve.

In fact, these very traits are precisely what Western nations need most at this moment. The misuse of psychological language to discredit honest leaders is itself a form of manipulation. We cannot turn diagnostic terms into moral weapons, nor demonize individuals for perceived flaws when imperfection is a universal human condition.

Projection is, in fact, a well-documented tactic used by individuals with this very condition. It is not uncommon for them to accuse others of negative behaviours precisely when their own disordered conduct is being examined under the same lens.

Leaders in the Western nations should be judged by high standards but primarily for their commitment to their countries and Western civilization.

Childhood Angle of Malignant Personality Disorders

Normal people do not harm others. The ordinary individuals you and I encounter in daily life do not have the stomach to inflict pain on innocent people, nor do they possess the persistence to sustain efforts

aimed at erasing entire groups. The patterns we have witnessed are textbook examples of unrestrained psychopathy. Narcissistic Personality Disorder is also clinically and empirically observed to cause pain and suffering in others[145]. I do acknowledge that history has seen atrocities committed by masses of people, such as the genocides in Rwanda and Cambodia, but those typically arose from misinformation, hate-mongering, and the deliberate cultivation of a false sense of grievances. Even in those cases, such movements were almost always orchestrated by a small number of psychopathic individuals.

The *mad kings* I mentioned earlier—this subversive force that may be driving large-scale harm—appears to be both thoroughly radicalized and profoundly psychopathic at the same time.

These people, however, as discussed prior, believe themselves to be the most valuable, wisest, and ethical people in the room. Here's why: as a starting point, many of them either grew up being told they were special and superior to others, or they developed that belief as a coping mechanism in response to constant criticism and emotional deprivation during childhood.

Not all abused children develop narcissism or psychopathy. Some, in fact, become deeply empathetic and sensitive to suffering. A child does not understand the world at large; their entire sense of safety revolves around their parents and immediate family. They cannot see far into the future and are inherently vulnerable. When they encounter pain, abuse, criticism, or bullying, they cannot escape it. A child is powerless in such an environment, trapped within the very space that should provide safety.

---

[145] Joshua D Miller et al., "Narcissistic Personality Disorder: Relations with Distress and Functional Impairment," *Comprehensive Psychiatry* 48, no. 2 (2007): 170 - 7, https://doi.org/10.1016/j.comppsych.2006.10.003.

In these circumstances, the developing brain adapts for survival. It forms coping mechanisms[146] to withstand the ongoing trauma. In some cases, those mechanisms evolve into narcissistic or psychopathic traits.

It can also happen the other way around. A person may grow up in a stable, even loving family, where narcissistic parents continually reinforce the idea that their child is exceptional or superior[147]. Excessive praise and overvaluation growing up are clinically believed to lead to the development of these disorders. Such conditioning can produce the same outcome—narcissistic traits reinforced by a deep sense of entitlement.

Disordered individuals tend to almost always create a home environment either dysfunctional or highly entitlement and overvaluation-driven, that contributes to the development of these disorders. This way the next generation inherits the same disorders, and so the cycle can go on forever. Unless someone consciously breaks this cycle, this tends to have the potential to pass down successive offsprings.

Furthermore, psychologists believe that the propensity to develop these personality disorders is also genetic. People with Narcissistic Personality Disorder (NPD) are more likely to have parents or close relatives with it[148].

---

146 Hope Therapy & Counselling Services, "The Link between Trauma and Narcissism," *Counselling Directory,* May 12, 2023, https://www.counselling-directory.org.uk/articles/the-link-between-trauma-and-narcissism.

147 Eddie Brummelman et al., "Origins of Narcissism in Children," *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences* 112, no. 12 (2015): 3659 - 3662, https://doi.org/10.1073/pnas.1420870112.

148 "Narcissistic Personality Disorder," *Cleveland Clinic,* August 15, 2023, https://my.clevelandclinic.org/health/diseases/9742-narcissistic-personality-disorder.

Why would someone practice self-reflection or correction when their developing brain was trained to believe they were already superior? Why would they cultivate empathy if they grew up thinking others were beneath them?

When faced with criticism, these individuals often respond with anger or tantrums, clinically known as *narcissistic rage*[149], because they have never learned to tolerate or process self-evaluation. Criticism is uncomfortable even for healthy adults; imagine how it feels for someone whose entire identity is built on the belief that they are special. Over time, this absence of self-reflection[150]—what enables truly great people to grow through decades of introspection—evolves into a profound lack of depth. They lack emotional and moral intelligence, the very qualities that define genuine wisdom.

On the surface, such individuals may appear perfectly normal, but they are often developmentally arrested in terms of emotional and cognitive maturity. This, too, is a form of childhood abuse. Children should grow up with a healthy sense of self-worth, not a distorted belief in their superiority. While these traits can emerge later in life, they overwhelmingly take root in childhood. People with such disorders can seem completely ordinary until a covert or permissive environment allows their cruelty and dysfunction to surface.

Psychologists believe that their neural pathways associated with empathy and inhibition are underdeveloped[151], leading to emotional

---

[149] LPC Meaghan Rice PsyD., "Narcissistic Rage: Identifying & Protecting Yourself — Talkspace," *Mental Health Conditions,* September 27, 2023, https://www.talkspace.com/mental-health/conditions/articles/narcissistic-rage/.
[150] Julie L. Hall, "7 Reasons Narcissists Rarely Grow Emotionally," *Psychology Today,* March 4, 2022, https://www.psychologytoday.com/us/blog/the-narcissist-in-your-life/202203/7-reasons-narcissists-rarely-grow-emotionally.
[151] Ester di Giacomo et al., "The Dark Side of Empathy in Narcissistic Personality Disorder," *Frontiers in Psychiatry* 14 (March 2023), https://doi.org/10.3389/fpsyt.2023.1074558.

shallowness and thoughtless behaviour, traits that inevitably give rise to chaos when such individuals are granted power or influence. Place a group of them together, and whatever hesitation might exist individually quickly dissolves as they reinforce one another's impulses.

They're also very predictable. Those who have personally suffered at the hands of individuals with psychopathy and NPD often observe: *"A malignant narcissist or a psychopath—no matter where they are found, which part of the world they live in, what their status or power may be, how much they earn, or what their age is after childhood—exhibit the same patterns, the same traits, and the same tactics. They are remarkably predictable. Once you have truly known one of them, you will recognize the playbook of each of millions of them."* This isn't a single quote from any source, but rather the essence of what is widely reported by professionals and survivors alike. Having personally known and observed these disorders up close for decades, I can attest that there is nothing truer than this.

Common Traits of NPD

The following traits are all clinically recognized characteristics of Narcissistic Personality Disorder (NPD) at the individual level, as identified and verified across decades of psychological research. I have referenced several of these throughout this book in different contexts, and here I list them together for further detail and clarity. Although touched upon in earlier sections, I will leave it to readers to further connect these traits with the broader global patterns and harms discussed across the chapters. The parallels, I believe, speak for themselves.

- Grandiosity — Narcissists see themselves as exceptional and destined for greatness, often detached from reality.

- Fragile Self-Esteem — Their grandiosity masks deep inadequacy and collapses instantly under scrutiny or failure.
- Entitlement — They expect special treatment, privilege, and obedience without accountability.
- Fantasies of Power — They live in grand illusions of limitless control and dominance, mistaking delusion for destiny.
- Lack of Empathy — They feel or understand others' suffering very little to nil, and often see compassion as weakness.
- Narcissistic Supply Addiction — They are compulsively dependent on attention, admiration, fear, or other stimuli to maintain a fragile sense of self.
- Hypersensitivity to Shame — Tiny perceived slights trigger disproportionate shame that quickly turns into rage or withdrawal.
- Narcissistic Injury — Any criticism, real or imagined, provokes extreme defensiveness or revenge.
- Delusions of Victimhood — They present themselves as persecuted while actively harming others.
- Projection — They accuse others of the very behaviours and intentions they secretly harbour.
- Addiction to Control — They must dominate every variable, including others' emotions and decisions.
- Splitting (All-Good/All-Bad Thinking) — They perceive people and situations in absolutes, lacking nuance or grey areas.
- Pathological Envy — They harbour intense and destructive form of envy, and resent others' success, peace, or happiness and seek to undermine it.

- Emotional Sadism — They take pleasure in others' pain or humiliation, sometimes masked as "justice" or "teaching a lesson."
- Triangulation — They pit people against one another to maintain control, advance their designs, or create chaos, environments in which they naturally tend to thrive.
- Gaslighting — They distort reality so that victims doubt their own perceptions and sanity.
- Stalking — They relentlessly monitor, pursue, or terrorize targets to agonize them, punish perceived rejection, or maintain control.
- Lying and Deception — Falsehoods are habitual; truth is fluid and only serves manipulation.
- Chronic Manipulation — Every relationship becomes a means to sustain power or self-image.
- Love-Bombing/Idealization-Devaluation Cycle — Excessive early praise or charm soon turns to contempt, criticism, and discard.
- Blame-Shifting — They project responsibility for their failures or ill deeds onto others.
- Fear and Intimidation — They use threats, anger, or withdrawal to enforce submission.
- Vindictive Retaliation (Narcissistic Revenge) — They hold long-term grudges and exact disproportionate punishment for perceived wrongs.
- Paranoia and Excessive Reactions — They perceive imaginary threats everywhere and respond with aggression far beyond reason.

- Exposure — They fear being unmasked above all else, and will go to any length, whether it is lies, smears, or destruction, to prevent their true nature from being revealed.
- Chronic Boredom, Emptiness, and Chaos-Seeking — They provoke conflict or instability to feel stimulated or relevant.
- Obsessive Control of Narrative — They rewrite events to remain the hero or the biggest victim in the history of the solar system in every story.
- Image Obsession — They maintain a polished external persona while behaving cruelly covertly or in private.
- Intellectualization & Pseudo-Profound Speech — They use jargon or word salads to appear intelligent and avoid losing arguments.
- Cultivation of Enablers — They surround themselves with compliant admirers who reinforce their delusions.
- Proxy Recruitment (Flying Monkeys) — They enlist others to attack, monitor, or pressure targets on their behalf.
- Smear Campaigns — They spread lies or half-truths to destroy reputations before being exposed.
- Silent Treatment/Stonewalling — They withdraw affection or communication as punishment and control.
- Exploitation of Talent and Parasitic Attachment — They attach themselves and drain or steal capable people's skills or creativity to mask their own mediocrity.
- Pathological Competitiveness — Every interaction must be a contest they win, regardless of cost.
- Erasure of Identity — They rewrite others' values, achievements, beliefs, or histories.

- Emotional Contagion — Their instability spreads to those around them, creating confusion and despair.
- Belief of Invincibility — They believe they are untouchable, above law, morality, or consequence.
- Collective Delusion-Making — They cultivate shared delusional fantasies to validate their false narratives.
- Cognitive Dissonance Tolerance — They comfortably hold contradictory beliefs, adapting "truth" to convenience.
- Inability to Self-Reflect — They cannot learn, apologize, or grow because they lack honest introspection.

If such behaviours can cause long-term damages within families, workplaces, or communities, one can only imagine the scale of harm if individuals with these traits find themselves in positions of global power.

When scaled to global levels, **gaslighting**[152] evolves into mass psychological warfare—history rewritten and reality itself distorted until people begin to doubt the evidence of their own senses. Basic logic and civilizational anxieties that concern the very survival itself are demonized, and so on. **Lying and deception**[153] then serve as the scaffolding of this false order, sustaining a world where appearances and deceits replace truth, and narrative outweighs fact. When challenged, **smear campaigns**[154] ensure that voices of integrity are

---

[152] LPC Meaghan Rice PsyD., "What Is Narcissistic Gaslighting? — Talkspace," *Mental Health Conditions,* February 7, 2022, https://www.talkspace.com/mental-health/conditions/articles/narcissistic-gas-lighting/.
[153] Shahida Arabi, "12 Of The Most Common Lies Sociopaths And Narcissists Tell, Translated Into Truth," *Psych Central,* September 5, 2018, https://psychcentral.com/blog/recovering-narcissist/2018/09/12-of-the-most-common-lies-sociopaths-and-narcissists-tell-translated-into-truth.
[154] Susan Fishman, "Spotting and Dealing with a Smear Campaign by a Narcissist," *Psych Central,* March 16, 2017, https://psychcentral.com/disorders/ways-narcissists-smear-others.

defamed, isolated, and rendered suspect, while **stalking**[155]—whether through surveillance or intimidation—becomes the global enforcement arm of the dysfunction. What begins as the mindset of a single disordered individual could thus mutate into an entire machinery of malicious control—subtle, pervasive, and devastatingly real.

I believe the patterns of harm we see today, although usually taken for granted, are extremely abnormal. What the world faces today is likely worse than any alternative, even among the darkest possibilities. No alternative would even entertain targeting an entire civilization, the West, with such carelessness and cruelty. Certainly nothing with species-level consequences. Certainly nothing on the level of pointless agendas harming the planet earth itself. At worst, it would have been limited to individual countries, with a few disordered individuals chasing power or enrichment. And that would have been contained swiftly if the Western systems of checks and balance functioned properly, which apparently don't due to the possible sabotages and capture.

Over decades, or plausibly even across generations, these structures seem to continue to refine themselves, not because of genius but because relentless malignant psychopathology always iterates. What would look like a "master plan" would actually just be decades of trial and error using the same crude tools: censorship, intimidation, and manipulation.

Tactical sophistry can be inserted into virtually any system, and into every domain of life. If that regularly arises as the disordered individuals advance their malicious grandiose goals, they would

---

[155] Rachael Wheatley and Clare Conway, "Stalking, Narcissistic Vulnerability and the Application of Schema Therapy 'I Was Punishing Her for Me Not Being Good Enough,'" *Journal of Criminal Psychology* 13, no. 2 (2023): 76 - 90, https://doi.org/10.1108/JCP-07-2021-0025.

genuinely be inclined to think they are breaking world records in intelligence, and that their delusions of superiority must therefore be justified. From the outside, however, from healthy individuals' perspective, it would be pointless, sickening, and simply just unrestrained malice.

There could easily be more than a hundred traits associated with malignant narcissism, many of which mirror what is unfolding against the West today. However, some of these traits are deeply personal, rooted in internal emotional experiences rather than outward behaviour, and therefore difficult to identify on a collective or societal scale.

INDIVIDUAL-CENTRIC NATURE OF MALICE

What is rarely reported as a formal clinical trait, yet widely understood in practice implicitly, is the unhealthy and often absurd fixation these individuals develop on their targets. The fixation seems to, in this case of global harm, frequently extend far beyond what is merely unwise into ridiculous behaviour, even when the public perception of the perpetrators' mental or moral stability is obvious and growing.

Despite the apparent global reach of this apparatus, it might operate with pettiness and small-mindedness, as it appears to be obsessively individual-centred. When power of this scale is driven by malice, the result is unbounded harm. Personal violations could proliferate, small sustained crimes could escalate into larger ones, and abuse could become institutionalised rather than incidental. And this is before we even begin to speak of outright atrocities.

An intense and destructive envy[156] is well documented in these disorders by psychologists and researchers worldwide. What begins

---

[156] Guyonne Rogier et al., "Pathological Narcissism and Sadistic Personality: The Role of Rivalry and Malicious Envy," *Personality and Individual Differences* 205 (April 2023): 112097, https://doi.org/10.1016/j.paid.2023.112097.

as a private, festering emotion, and a set of grievances, can escalate into industrial-scale harm. On the personal level, the implications are even more disturbing. A global machinery operating across nations seemingly without much accountability can fixate on innocent individuals for no reason deeper than its own toxic mix of emotions. Once someone becomes a target, it may be nothing more than a nasty set of emotions: raw, malicious, irrational, and unrelenting, that keeps this force locked onto them.

It is a disturbing reality that a world in the modern age with such sophistication in every area of life, advanced technology, advanced life, and an entire ecosystem built on progress could plausibly be influenced by an apparatus that behaves like that one person out of a hundred in a classroom, the archetypal psycho, lacking wisdom, stuck in the tantrums of a seven-year-old, someone who would go on to destroy relationships and sabotage lives. We wouldn't even begin to perceive that one individual constantly sucking joy and progress out of ninety-nine others in the class even for four years of the degree, yet we seem to have to contend with this global harm that scales to affect hundreds of millions of people in seeming perpetuity.

INCREASING SOPHISTICATION IN PLAUSIBLE DENIABILITY OPERATIONS

One of the most sophisticated tactics employed appears to be the strategic use of plausible deniability. Rather than acting openly, the subversive machinery may be operating through a web of indirect alignments, quietly enabling or coordinating with oppressive regimes that, on the surface, appear to have divergent interests. Some may even seem hostile to one another, or to the very forces responsible for coordinating them. This fragmentation will create confusion. When crimes are carried out by actors with different stated motives and apparent rivalries, tracing responsibility back to the actual source

becomes extraordinarily difficult. The result is a carefully constructed smokescreen.

This apparatus could gravitate toward regimes that are deeply unpopular, authoritarian, or already compromised. Such regimes are uniquely useful. Their existing brutality and corruption provide cover, allowing malign actions to blend into what is already expected of them. Even when these regimes might posture as the ultimate adversaries to the actual perpetrators, their role may still be that of proxy rather than opponent.

Another recurring tactic might involve the selective appropriation of language. Statements might be cherry-picked, past remarks may be repurposed, and a victim's views manipulated to manufacture plausible deniability.

Historical Cycles of Tyranny

Every age has its mad kings and erratic emperors. And every age watches them fall. Power built on cruelty always devours itself. The tragedy of oppressors is not only the suffering they cause, but the delusion they live in, believing themselves untouchable, only to discover too late that history remembers the likes of them as mere warnings.

Nature has always had a way of restoring balance. Light prevails, eventually. The world bends back toward equilibrium, no matter how deep the shadows grow. Nature always wins.

Rome had Commodus, Nero, and Caligula, men who thought themselves above everyone else but became prisoners of their own delusions. Each descended further into cruelty, paranoia, and destruction until their reigns collapsed under the weight of their own insanity. The pattern repeats across history: an intoxicating rise, a spiral into darkness, and an inevitable fall.

Even our stories and myths reflect this truth. The *mad king* is a timeless archetype, defined by a handful of sequences that almost never change:

- **Cruelty** and indifference to human suffering
- **Lack of empathy**, seeing people only as tools or threats
- **Delusions of grandiosity and invincibility**, believing themselves beyond consequence
- **Gradual descent into madness**, as reality chips away at their illusions
- **Crime and atrocity sprees,** as victims try to safeguard themselves and ask for an end to atrocities
- And finally, **renewal** — the restoration of balance once their rule ends

Let's go through some historical examples.

IVAN THE TERRIBLE

In Russia, Ivan the Terrible's[157] reign was marked by paranoia, cruelty, and institutional violence. One of his darkest phases was the Oprichnina (1565–1572): a period during which he carved out a private court and army, the oprichniki, who would terrorize and eliminate perceived enemies. Examples of his cruelty include the massacre of Novgorod's inhabitants (where thousands were killed), public executions of boyars, and violent purges. He is also accused of killing his own heir in a fit of rage. His violence was sometimes symbolic, sometimes gratuitous, but always intended to project fear and break resistance. His dynasty collapsed soon after, throwing the nation into the chaos of the Time of Troubles.

---

[157] Biography.com Editors, "Ivan the Terrible," *Biography,* November 20, 2023, https://www.biography.com/royalty/a45896491/ivan-the-terrible.

PHALARIS OF ACRAGAS

Phalaris was a tyrant in ancient Sicily[158] who ruled over Acragas (now Agrigento). He is infamous for the Brazen Bull, a hollow bronze bull-shaped torture device. Victims were locked inside, fires lit beneath. Legend says that the inventor of the bull, Perilaus, was tricked into testing it himself. Phalaris was later deposed and, according to some accounts, was thrown into his own bull.

DIONYSIUS I OF SYRACUSE

Dionysius rose as a populist general but quickly became one of antiquity's most over-suspicious rulers[159]. He surrounded himself with guards, distrusted even his closest allies, and executed people on suspicion alone. He allegedly constructed torture chambers and spied relentlessly. He was possibly poisoned by his own descendants.

QIN SHI HUANG

The first emperor of a unified China, Qin Shi Huang achieved greatness in scale, but also brutality[160]. He buried scholars alive who opposed him, burned entire libraries, and enforced his rule with merciless labour projects like the early Great Wall, which cost countless lives. He once executed people living in an entire area because someone inscribed sedition on a stone.

NERO

Already infamous, Nero's reign was one of spectacle and paranoia. Beyond his artistic pretensions, he was accused of executing his own mother Agrippina, his wife Octavia, and close advisors, often in cruel,

---

158 Britannica Editors, "Phalaris," *Encyclopedia Britannica,* July 20, 1998, https://www.britannica.com/biography/Phalaris.
159 "Dionysius," accessed December 19, 2025, https://www.thelatinlibrary.com/historians/notes/dionysius.html.
160 "Qin Shi Huangdi," *National Geographic,* December 19, 2025, https://www.nationalgeographic.com/culture/article/qin-shi-huangdi.

staged ways[161]. After the Great Fire of Rome, he scapegoated Christians, subjecting many to humiliating public deaths. It is rumoured that he had ordered that fire himself just so that he could make space for his palace. He also imagined himself a great actor and musician.

CALIGULA

Caligula's short reign was defined by excess and sadism[162]. He left Rome not strengthened by conquest or reform, but haunted by his inhumanity. His rule combined broader distrust with bizarre indulgences: he famously ordered bridges built for no strategic reason, squandered resources, and is remembered for having considered making his horse a consul.

COMMODUS

The son of Marcus Aurelius, Commodus spiralled into self-obsession and megalomania[163]. He styled himself as Hercules reborn, parading in lion skins. He fought in gladiatorial games rigged in his favour. His reckless vanity drained the treasury and undermined imperial governance, leaving the empire weakened and unstable. Commodus' reign ended in chaos and conspiracy due to his behaviour estranging everyone including the Senate, the military, and even his own household.

---

[161] BBC, "In Our Time - Nero to Zero: The Rise and Fall of a Brutal Roman Emperor," *BBC,* May 3, 2019, https://www.bbc.co.uk/programmes/articles/4DwgbSMcR5WZcxYjC2p1c9Z/nero-to-zero-the-rise-and-fall-of-a-brutal-roman-emperor.

[162] "The Roman Empire: In the First Century. The Roman Empire. Emperors. Caligula," *PBS,* accessed December 19, 2025, https://www.pbs.org/empires/romans/empire/caligula.html.

[163] "Commodus," *British Museum,* accessed December 19, 2025, https://www.britishmuseum.org/collection/term/BIOG140659.

CARACALLA

Caracalla is remembered for his infamous massacre in Alexandria, where thousands were killed after he was mocked by citizens[164]. He extended Roman citizenship across the empire, but largely to expand the tax base rather than out of benevolence. His unbound suspicions made him violent and unpredictable.

DOMITIAN

Domitian ruled as an autocrat, surrounded by fear. He had a habit of punishing dissent harshly[165]. His led purges against senators, officials, and even his own household. Despite some administrative competence, he became despised for violence, suspicion, and repression. Trials for treason became commonplace, and a climate of informants and denunciations flourished.

ELAGABALUS

Elagabalus[166] often tortured or executed servants and favourites when they displeased him, sometimes for trivial reasons, showing his capricious cruelty. Ancient sources describe humiliating fatal games and decadent feasts. His habits of violent religious rituals concerned Romans. His reign was remembered for instability, contempt for tradition, and, of course, arbitrary cruelty.

---

[164] Franco Cavazzi, "Caracalla AD 188-217 - a Cruel Tyrant and Savage Emperor," *Ginjomantas,* December 14, 2021, https://roman-empire.net/decline/caracalla.

[165] Nick Miller, "Who Was Roman Emperor Domitian and Why Was He Assassinated?," *Discovery UK,* April 3, 2023, https://www.discoveryuk.com/monarchs-and-rulers/who-was-roman-emperor-domitian-and-why-was-he-assassinated/.

[166] "Elagabalus: The Hated Roman Emperor Who Was Killed And Mutilated!," *Ancient Origins Reconstructing the Story of Humanity's Past,* accessed December 19, 2025, https://www.ancient-origins.net/history-famous-people/elagabalus-0014728.

It has been a long time coming in our own age. The modern *mad kings*, whether individuals or groups, seem to have had their play for generations. Through manipulation, coercion, and fear, they appear to have held on longer than most due to the shadowy nature of the tactics apparently being employed. But the cycle has never been broken. It never will be.

I love the sentence I'm about to write, it sums it up pretty nicely: *"Pathological systems self-destruct by escalating beyond their capacity to manage consequences."*

Perhaps, this time, it is time to let them go. Let them keep their wealth. Let them believe, if they must, that they've won. But they must release civilization back to its natural course.

Malignant Narcissistic or Psychopathic Situations and Threats

When you attempt to resolve a situation created by a personality-disordered individual, one of the first things you notice is their inability to step back and allow resolution to happen. They lack the innate capacity to see shades of grey—it's always all or nothing, black or white[167]. This rigidity is one of their greatest weaknesses. Their thinking is dominated by extremes, and they have little internal compass to know when or where to stop. Balance eludes them completely; instead of compromise or reflection, they default to threats and coercion.

In the situation humanity faces today, threats are almost inevitable. It comes down to a stark choice: either endure intimidation

[167] "Black and White Thinking", accessed December 19, 2025, https://www.webmd.com/mental-health/black-and-white-thinking.

or allow the perpetrators to continue dismantling the West unchecked. Whenever civilization begins to defend or restore itself, the threats will resurface. Whether it is now, a decade in the future, or a century, that is something that may have to be manoeuvred at one point or another if civilization has to be saved. I have experienced this dynamic personally—years of threats and coercion before finally breaking free from the narcissistic family system that mirrored these patterns. And just as I found my way out then, I believe the world, too, can find its way out now.

If threats against Western nations, their people, or their civilization do arise at the hands of this subversive apparatus or its lapdogs, we must ask a crucial question: if this is how they behave now while the situation is still manageable, the damage still reversible, and the West still globally dominant, what will happen when it's not? The trajectory is crystal clear: everything that can happen at the expense of the West is happening. What happens when this imbalance reaches a breaking point and the West has been weakened too much to safeguard itself?

In the worst-case scenario, the current trends continue unchecked. Over the coming decades, Western populations shrink, key institutions weaken, and positions of responsibility are increasingly replaced by those indifferent, or even hostile, to the civilization's survival. Eventually, a moment will come when ordinary people realize that their very existence is at stake. They will begin to speak out against the injustices that have hollowed their nations from within.

And when that happens, when people finally raise their voices after decades of manipulation and suppression, the global perpetrators will likely react with panic and aggression. Their rigidity won't tolerate dissent; as their control weakens, they will lash out with

the same serious tyranny they have long prepared others to deny exists.

I sincerely hope it never comes to that. I believe we will find a middle path—that resolution will prevail, and genuine solutions will soon emerge to guide us toward peace and restoration. I want to believe that the West will soon begin to heal, that this trajectory will be reversed before it crosses the threshold of no return. Yet, if the current course continues, that darker outcome becomes not just possible, but inevitable.

I say all this from a place of genuine concern about the current state of affairs.

A MESSAGE TO THE PERPETRATORS

If there is any truth to my hypothesis of an organised influence, then the shadowy force should remember this: every act of intimidation, threat, and every black deed, only strips away their disguise and shows people exactly what kind of self-destructive and deranged individuals they truly must be. Threats do not scatter blame; they sharpen it. People may stay silent, but they are not deceived; they already know the source of this subversion. If there are threats, I believe they are going to be the actual cause that make things more difficult for the apparatus because it will drive people and civilization to find solutions to safeguard themselves.

There is only one viable path forward: reconciliation and a peaceful resolution. This is not about one nation or two. The entire world is weary of the same injustices. Every country is touched by the damage, and in the West especially, the weight of it is unbearable. Never before in history has such a pattern of harm spread so widely, across so many lands, at the same time.

The subversive individuals must understand: they are not dealing with a single rival they can pit against another. This is civilization-

wide. For the first time in history, the **entirety** of Western civilization has unified. It may not look that way on the surface, but I believe we are there already.

The Hypothetical Bird's-Eye View — From the Mind of a Subversive Individual

This section may echo a few points discussed earlier in the book. However, for the sake of emphasis and continuity, I believe those ideas are worth revisiting, even if it means a touch of repetition.

So, imagine it's 1950, and you belong to a group that views one particular civilization with deep resentment—the civilization that, by then, still represents roughly one-third to one-fourth of humanity and has given the world modern science, law, technology, the arts, and the moral foundations of the age. It stands as the economic and military fulcrum of the world. Perhaps you and those around you have developed a deep-seated sense of grandiosity, coupled with an underlying insecurity that cannot tolerate the competence of others. Malignant personality disorders reign supreme. Past misdeeds and excesses may also weigh on your conscience, fuelling fear of exposure and accountability. Over time, this combination of resentment, paranoia, and grandiosity evolves into a fixation, the belief that the only way to regain a sense of control, security, or superiority is to weaken, undermine, or dismantle the very civilization whose ingenuity and ability you could never openly match.

Suppose you have amassed enough indirect influence to meaningfully steer national decisions within these nations.

What, then, do you do?

Start quietly. Export its technology everywhere. Train foreign talent in its schools. Build capacity in other nations so they can one

day rival it. Make the transfer of know-how feel like progress or aid: altruistic and inevitable.

Simultaneously, sow internal rot. Introduce concepts and institutions that fragment civic cohesion (DEI, corrosive governance doctrines), dressed as moral progress. Normalize narratives that delegitimize the native majority's identity. Let media and institutions rehearse these ideas until dissent seems selfish or retrograde.

Create rivals deliberately. Pour target civilization's resources into agriculture, industry, education, and defence in potential challengers. Fund NGOs, foundations, and development programs that accelerate demographic, economic, military, and technological growth abroad. Make it routine: foreign states learn, adopt, and begin to compete.

Exploit migration and labour flows. Recruit and train talent from other nations and place them inside the civilization under subversion, in its universities, companies, and public institutions. Promote them as superior hires while denigrating local talent with platitudes about "diversity" and "inclusion." Do this gradually and relentlessly; its effects compound.

Weaponize narratives. Use media, NGOs, and PR networks to reframe every internal problem you created as an unavoidable crisis or a moral failing of the native population. When leaders push back, smear them, marginalize them, or remove them by legal and extra-legal means. If exposure threatens you, label truth as paranoia or conspiracy theory.

Leverage policy and finance. Push policy changes and international institutions that limit the target's sovereignty. Make their industries and infrastructures dependent on global systems you control or influence.

Repeat and iterate. Every scandal and manufactured emergency distracts the target from the underlying pattern. While they scramble

to treat the symptoms, you deepen the harm: demographic erosion, institutional capture, economic waste, cultural disorientation, and more.

Fast forward to 2025: the civilization you began undermining has been hollowed out, numerically and institutionally, from one-third of the world to roughly one-tenth, while other societies have grown stronger. Open-border rhetoric and relentless immigration have compounded the effect. The system you have built might even appear accidental to some indoctrinated sections of the target populations.

You cover it all up with crime, artificial calamities, mass atrocities, and false flags.

Once seen together, the pattern looks less like random policy and more like a long game.

As sinister as it sounds, this could be the reality today.

Contrasting the Subversive Apparatus with Western Civilization

This plausible force appears to operate in the very opposite spirit of light. It seems to cultivate hatred, suffering, persecution, and cruelty. Patterns suggest that it could be empowering tyrants, having honest leaders silenced or imprisoned, committing crimes both overt and covert, and may even stand behind certain acts of terrorism or engineered "accidents." Every lever of influence is apparently twisted to advance agendas that spread misery and moral decay. Yes, it might have its lapdogs and proxies scattered across the world, but the deeper source of this broad malignancy seems to originate with the machinery itself.

And this is why I love the West. Because even as it struggles against these same forces within its own borders, it continues to lead the world in hope and justice. While the evil undermines, sabotages,

and gaslights it, the West still calls for human rights, still presses for justice, still advocates for those in dark corners of the globe.

At times it feels almost surreal, as if the world has become a movie. In movies you see a handful of heroes standing against a vast evil. In reality, I believe there are hundreds of millions of people who carry intentions of light and love, many of them so gaslighted they don't even fully grasp the magnitude of the malice they might be up against. That doesn't mean people outside the West lack love or good intentions, but right now I'm speaking specifically of the West.

This is not a poetic claim, nor a sentimental one. I believe that the overwhelming majority of Western populations embody some of the most balanced, finest, and morally developed traits humanity has produced. These traits exist everywhere, but in many other parts of the world they are exceptional. In the West, they function as a norm.

I believe that this norm is what sets the West apart, among other factors. Where it is absent or weak, progress tends to be fragile, reversible, or entirely illusory; and the regard for human rights and dignity rarely endure.

Across societies, this reality appears to exist on a spectrum. The West occupies the highest end of it. Asian nations such as China, South Korea, and Japan lie near that end as well.

This is deeply grounded in personal and group psychology, and it offers an uncomfortable but consistent observation: actors operating at lower moral equilibria, with lesser capabilities, are often most irritated by those at higher ones.

Though parts of it appear to have been damaged, and though some hostile force seems to have succeeded in corrupting elements of it in some countries, the West cannot be allowed to weaken further. When the West weakens, something essential weakens with it. The loss is not regional. It is human.

Without a thriving West, these traits will exist throughout the world, but in rarity, constantly under attack, and constantly supressed and subjugated. Only the West as a force protects the highest qualities humanity has to offer on a civilizational level. Humanity does not need scattered individuals carrying these values in isolation. It needs nations that protect and project them. If the West continues to weaken, much of what humanity promises will not merely decline. It will be lost.

This is not a casual claim or a theory. It is a subject that warrants far deeper study and sustained examination. The very movements such as enlightenment owe their existence to this underlying phenomenon.

And make no mistake: this subversion is plausibly very real. Were it not for its presence, I believe the world would be a far happier, and far less miserable place. The patterns I outline in this book reveal forces on a scale perhaps unmatched in human history, that continue to hold humanity back. These actors might see themselves as clever, strategic, or even righteous, yet in truth they would be nothing more than reckless, destructive, manipulative, and malicious, the very embodiment of evil. An unwise and unrestrained evil in my experience is far more destructive than anything else in the world. I don't use that word lightly, but it had to be spoken, at least once.

On one side, you likely have lies, tyranny, persecution, crime, atrocities, smears, degeneracy, artificial crises, and a campaign bent on destroying the very civilization that generated prosperity for the entire planet. On the other, you have the West: the source of modern life. One side appears to thrive on deception, instability, and destruction. The other, often without even realizing it, has brought joy, light, and freedom to billions.

DISCLAIMER: Expressions such as *mad kings* or *perpetrators* in this book are used in the symbolic manner, to illustrate behaviour, not identity.

Chapter 4

Reversing the Subversion: Paths to Recovery

Throughout this book, I have outlined several approaches aimed at countering civilizational sabotage, and I will introduce a few additional ones in this chapter.

ANALYTICAL SCOPE AND ASSUMPTIONS

The proposals set out in this section are derived from the patterns, dynamics, and risks examined in the preceding chapters. They do not rest on claims of complete knowledge, definitive attribution, or absolute certainty. Rather, they represent a reasoned response to what emerges from the available evidence, lived experience, and observed behavioural consistencies discussed throughout this work, including the analysis of what is described here as the "subversive apparatus."

These recommendations are therefore offered as strategic safeguards and corrective measures under conditions of uncertainty, regardless of whether every underlying interpretation presented earlier is ultimately confirmed in full.

I. Cognitive and Cultural Foundations

When we lose the ability to name reality clearly, to recognize manipulation, and to defend moral and cultural boundaries, every other solution can become fragile. This section therefore addresses the internal conditions that create a right environment for renewal: clarity of thought, psychological resilience, cultural self-respect, and the refusal to internalize narratives designed to weaken or disorient.

The Essential Mindset Pivot

The most fundamental solution, and the foundation upon which all others rest, in my opinion, is a collective change in mindset. At first glance, this may sound like a cliche statement.

When one considers the West's ingenuity, its long history of extraordinary achievements and feats, and its ongoing, indispensable contributions to the modern world, and then contrasts this with the near total absence of safeguards protecting its civilizational wellbeing, a deep inconsistency becomes impossible to ignore. Something is wrong.

Viewed through this lens, the relentless gaslighting, indoctrination, demonising, suppression of speech, and scapegoating of Western populations no longer appear disconnected. They begin to look purposeful. In such conditions, maintaining a clear, sober understanding of what is actually happening, despite the surrounding fog, becomes essential. Luckily, I believe, populations across the West are starting to see it clearly just recently.

This clarity must form the bedrock. It must become the default outlook, the core attitude from which every meaningful solution can arise. And given the demonstrated brilliance, creativity, and problem-solving capacity of Western populations, there is little doubt that once this clarity is restored, decisive solutions will follow.

As someone who has personally been a victim of narcissistic abuse, I recognize the patterns all too well. There are striking parallels between personal narcissistic dynamics and the civilizational damage taking place today. These individuals all seem to operate in the same way. They do not want victims to recognize their worth. They usually tend to force a distorted version of it.

The second thing the malicious individuals tend to do is divert attention from what truly matters, using distraction and manipulation, so they can continue undermining the targets without resistance, entirely uncontested.

Once you begin to recognize these patterns for what they are, you will see how absurd it has all been: both the subversion itself and,

even more importantly, the fact that such subversion was ever allowed to happen.

This mindset should also carry the awareness that discouragement and obstacles may appear along the way, precisely because such progress is what these forces fear most. They seem to have thrived only because the West has been somewhat unaware of the gravity of damage, allowing them to run rampant.

There is nothing wrong with seeking solutions to the legitimate issues that Western Civilization faces. For instance, directly addressing declining birth rates within communities is a perfectly reasonable goal, something even this apparatus cannot twist.

To navigate these crises, the West might require solutions that are no nonsense, sustained, and sometimes even subtle.

Once those solutions emerge, momentum will build. And when it does, renewed prosperity is not speculative. It is inevitable.

Independent Think Tanks and Research Institutions for Civilizational Defence

There is a need for a dedicated, universally respected institution—whether governmental, private, or a coalition of think tanks and nonprofits—entrusted with identifying, documenting, and addressing the challenges facing Western Civilization, from technological proliferation to demographic decline.

Scattered concerns across the society need structure, research, and systematization. Individuals writing books or publishing articles is not enough. What is required is a sustained, institutional effort that gathers evidence, connects patterns, and presents findings in a way that cannot be easily dismissed. Concerns must be transformed into authoritative reports, vivid narratives, and irrefutable data, widely shared, widely read, and impossible to ignore.

Organizations such as Amnesty International publish annual reports on human rights; Freedom House evaluates the state of democracy; and Transparency International measures global corruption. Yet no universally recognized institution exists to systematically audit and safeguard the economic, cultural, and civilizational well-being of the West itself. We need an institution whose reach and influence extend to a scale comparable to that of mainstream media.

Such an institution does not need to be necessarily official. It could begin as semi-official, private, or even a citizen-driven initiative—coherent and organized at the outset, but capable of scaling with time and momentum. Resistance from the mainstream institutions is inevitable. That is precisely why the effort must be persistent, well-researched, and credible.

Without coherent knowledge, responses remain fragmented. Without authoritative reports, narratives are dismissed as conspiracies theories. Without institutional credibility, Western populations lack the tools to defend their long-term interests.

Specifically, detailed and continuous reporting on demographic trends within Western civilization must be made publicly available, allowing people to monitor progress or setbacks in near real time. Entire think tanks, research institutions, magazines, and news platforms could be dedicated to this purpose. The precise population figures of Germanic, Spanish, English, Viking, French, and other descendant groups should be consistently published, regardless of how much resistance or obfuscation such transparency might provoke from subversive influences.

This is not a call for division. Finding solutions to civilization-wide problems is everyone's right, and no propaganda can vilify such

a mission. At its heart, this is positive, necessary, and forward-looking, nothing more, and certainly nothing less.

Defending Free Speech as the First Line of Defence

The efforts and the resulting success in demonising legitimate and serious concerns affecting Western nations have had serious consequences. From AI tuning to mainstream media, this domain seems to have attracted intense fixation from the subversive force, and for an obvious reason. Falsehoods cannot sustain themselves unaided. Lies require protection. Deception demands reinforcement. Censorship, therefore, has been a necessity for unnatural schemes to survive, justify themselves, and endure.

There is nothing illegitimate about recognising and defending one's interests, whether as an individual, a nation, a race, or a civilization. This is not a Western plea. It is stated here by a non-Western observer, viewing these dynamics from an external and neutral standpoint. Derogatory and disrespectful labels deployed against native populations by mainstream media and this machinery do not invalidate the fundamental right to argue and seek for civilizational survival. The principle for self-protection applies universally. It is not exclusive to the West.

In Western nations themselves, especially within them, you are encouraged to talk negatively or even hatefully about those very nations and its populations, yet not even remotely question the harmful narratives or forces perpetuating them, which is a profound and unnecessary double-standard.

The West must treat speech as sacred, non-negotiable, the very first line of defence against subversion. Without ample freedom of inquiry in the past, many of the problems discussed throughout this book have only deepened and multiplied over the decades. When

speech is policed, ideas wither, and the public becomes vulnerable to gaslighting, propaganda, and indoctrination, an easy target for subversion of every kind. That is precisely what seems to have happened for far too long. The subversive force seems obsessed with silencing conversations.

And it also means vigilance against new forms of censorship. AI models can be tuned to erase entire perspectives. "Fact-checkers" can become gatekeepers of unnatural narratives. Media monopolies can distort reality.

If we lose the right to say what is real, we lose the ability to act on what is real. Speech, therefore, must not only be defended but cherished as the very heartbeat of freedom and as a shield against these ongoing patterns.

Social media platforms should reorient themselves as neutral carriers, not narrative curators or ideological arbiters. Their role must be limited to enabling communication, not shaping belief, suppressing dissent, or enforcing opaque value systems through algorithmic manipulation. They cannot remain instruments of control or quietly steer public consciousness. That power is incompatible with a free civilization.

At the same time, the West must actively encourage the development of decentralized, censorship-resistant technologies that cannot be centrally captured or coerced by any single authority, corporate or political. Systems that distribute control, whether through decentralized networks, open protocols, or user-owned infrastructure, could restore true freedom by design.

Recognising Honest Leaders as Vital Assets

Honest politicians across Western nations must be recognized as civilizational assets. Those who are not so honest inevitably might become assets for the subversive force.

I hold deep respect for leadership across the political spectrum, and I encourage respecting every leader whether if one agrees with them or not. The patterns of harm we witness today go back to decades, and are not a fault of any one particular individual or leader. I believe we can disagree with their policies, and we can choose to elect someone else later, but we can still maintain respect for all.

However, at the same time, leaders who demonstrate loyalty, commitment, and honesty to their nations and Western civilization are rare, and should be consciously identified, prioritised, and supported.

I think ordinary citizens in Western nations carry a significant responsibility in this regard. Active participation in every voting process matters. Every single vote counts, not only because it is decisive on its own, but because widespread disengagement translates into millions of absent voices.

If a nation lacks a sympathetic or capable leader, then one must emerge, be recognized, and be supported through collective civic will.

Also, any leader in any non-Western country who is honest, principled, and capable will most often be a natural ally of Western civilization. It would therefore be both prudent and ethical to support such leaders globally, not as an act of domination, but as an investment in a more balanced, cooperative, and resilient world order.

When it comes to Western leadership, the populations should recognise honest and committed leaders when they do emerge, because such individuals are apparently not so common. Leaders who truly place their countries' well-being above their own almost always

do so at great personal cost. They sacrifice every aspect of their life simply so they can serve their nations with integrity. In the situation we face today as a collective, and particularly as a civilization, the value of such leadership cannot be understated.

The damage inflicted upon the West is immense. This is not a normal period in history, and it cannot be navigated with ordinary thinking or conventions. Any leadership that has demonstrated genuine loyalty to its people should perpetually remain part of the equation. If there are democratic mechanisms that allow honest leaders to continue serving their countries, those options should be considered as a priority.

Any positive momentum gained must not be surrendered. Other leaders should also be ready to carry the torch. The harmful apparatus I have described throughout this book appears deeply entrenched across the West, and the protective measures against it must be equally entrenched. Otherwise, the imbalance will remain, and the advantage will continue to lie with the elements that have been causing harm. Given the scale of what has already occurred, the situation is far too critical for that asymmetry to persist.

Lastly, across Western world, there is a growing and deeply troubling possibility: honest leaders, those who refuse to bend to the prevailing subversive currents, are being quietly sidelined or outright disqualified. It is a tactic long perfected in fragile, third-world democracies, now imported into the very heart of the West.

The methods vary. Sometimes it is judicial, wrapped in the language of legality: endless lawsuits, investigations stretched over years, obscure technicalities inflated into fatal disqualifications. Other times it is non-judicial, character assassinations in the press, coordinated smear campaigns, manufactured scandals, or the endless repetition of half-truths until reputations get tarnished. The process

is rarely about justice. It is about attrition: wearing down, discrediting, and disqualifying until the public has no choice but to turn away.

It is no accident. The machinery that thrives on subversion knows that ballot boxes are harder to control when honest voices inspire real popular trust. So instead, they might try to poison the well before the people even cast their vote. Candidates increasingly appear being dragged through procedural mud, trapped in kangaroo trials, and smeared.

The manipulation of voting systems itself appears to have become a reality and must not be allowed to solidify into a norm.

The irony is glaring. The very nations that once lectured the world on clean governance now find themselves flirting with the tactics of the corrupt regimes they once condemned. If this trend continues, Western democracy risks becoming a stage-managed theatre: elections held, votes counted, but outcomes carefully pruned to ensure the "right" kind of leaders survive the gauntlet.

Honest individuals, particularly judges and others in positions of integrity, often bear the brunt of this struggle. Their courage would deserve recognition, even if only quietly, for daring to resist tyranny.

Disregarding Relentless Replacement Indoctrination

Relentless replacement indoctrination must be called out for what it truly is. Indoctrination only works if you allow it to. The antidote is simple: refuse to let it sink in. When a message feels forced, when it is repeated with unnatural intensity, when every outlet pushes the same narrative—that's not persuasion, that's programming.

Take the Scottish ex-First Minister's speech. Some of the readers are probably aware of that racist speech. If you aren't, please search for it on the internet, you will find it easily. Take the constant media

talking points. These aren't organic ideas rising from the people; they seem to be manufactured lines fed from the top down.

Unnatural race-swapping in the movies and constant forced race-mixing indoctrination has no place in the West or anywhere else in the world. The word is "forced." I do not have any problem with natural, free, personal choices. However, when you take into account the larger demographic trends deliberately stacked against Western populations, this constant indoctrination increasing reeks creepy, sinister, and racist against native Western identity. The larger attempts at the replacement and erasure of nations and peoples in their own homeland, and trying to forcefully glorify and normalize "multiculturalism" and "diversity" with unnatural intensity is disturbing. Genuine multicultural exchange and authentic storytelling are worthy of respect, but forced and relentless indoctrination is not appreciated anywhere. The media in the West better start respecting Western populations or it risks alienating even the nicest of people.

The strength of free citizens lies in their ability to recognize manipulation for what it is. Indoctrination collapses the moment people see through it.

Promotion of Psychological Literacy

Recognizing the consequences of malignant personality disorders on civilizational scale could disarm their dangers. I believe that if we are to fully understand what is happening to Western civilisation, we must stop treating malign psychological disorders as private curiosities and start treating them as public vulnerabilities. Psychopathy and malignant narcissism are not just clinical labels you whisper about in therapy sessions; they are predictable patterns of behaviour that, when organised enough and given ideal conditions to thrive, can wreck institutions, and now, in this serious case, plausibly

even nations and a civilization. Our failure to name and study these patterns at scale might have left us blind to the possibility of a crucial driver of large-scale malice.

Psychological literacy does not ridicule complexity or deny political difference. It must not be applied indiscriminately to those with whom one holds political or personal disagreements. It simply equips citizens and institutions to see a recurring, destructive pattern for what it is. When you can name a tactic, you can inoculate against it. When institutions understand the risk, they can design buffers and redundancies that make single-point failure impossible.

I fully believe that psychological literacy can make a profound difference, if done correctly. It does require time and patience; I can say from experience that it may feel pointless to some yet transformative to others. But the fact remains: psychological literacy could be essential in some contexts.

Understanding Misplaced Compassion

One of the traits of Western societies with far reaching results, I fully believe, is an extraordinary capacity for kindness and compassion. Whether this collective trait fully emerged in recent times or was long present but constrained by harsher historical conditions, it has produced consequences that are now impossible to ignore. This is one of the reasons why I hold the West to such high regards. However, what is very warm and pleasant has also proven, paradoxically and unfortunately, to be detrimental.

This trait probably became one of the primary openings through which the subversive influence might have found ways to inflict damage. Had injustices and sabotages not reached such extreme scale, even at half their current intensity, the West's innate warmth and compassionate instincts would likely have made meaningful reform

impossible. It is only now, after restraint has given way to excess harm, that a realization may emerge: empathy without limits, when extended to the point of self-erasure, ceases to be a virtue.

As just one example among many, when an individual in the West suggests that unlimited humanitarianism may be unwise, it often provokes resistance or moral outrage. Yet in most other parts of the world, this view is not debated at all. It is the default assumption. Only the West permits its compassion to erode its own self-interest.

Had someone attempted to reverse these dynamics in the West fifty years ago, they would have faced fierce resistance from the very populations they sought to protect. Yet that same empathy may have culminated in many of the present predicaments of the West.

The phenomenon is also often coupled with mainstream media and globalist systems manufacturing and intensifying those sentiments.

This dynamic makes populations unusually vulnerable to indoctrination and propaganda. People are already inclined, out of compassion, to support harmful policies or remain indifferent to their consequences. Over time, those same policies are turned against them.

These instincts demand study to properly understand how such dynamics take hold. It may be that as societies truly advance in collective character, they develop heightened traits of empathy, maturity, and kindness that do not exist in less developed cultural contexts.

Being deeply humane is an extraordinary quality. I find it very commendable, and I'm personally very aligned to the same quality myself, but collectively, it has to find constructive ways to express itself. It cannot result in self-negation.

Terms such as "suicidal empathy" now appear regularly in public discourse because the problem has become impossible to deny.

It is time for the West to reserve its warmth and empathy for its own people, continuity, and self-interest. This is not a matter that affects only Western nations. In the long term, the consequences ripple outward, ultimately damaging even those who initially benefit from Western compassion. What feels humane in the short term often proves unhelpful over time when it undermines the source itself.

Western populations must reserve compassion for themselves; their own suffering, and the harms being done to them. These injuries are far greater than is commonly acknowledged, and their resolution may prove pivotal not only for the West, but for humanity as a whole. Compassion for the rest of the world should only be applied when it is appropriate and deserved.

II. Civilizational Defence

The following measures are not calls for aggression, but for protection, restraint, and the restoration of boundaries that once allowed the West to flourish.

Civilization-Wide Defence Against Subversion

To safeguard the West from sabotage, it is vitally important—and long overdue—that a centralized, civilization-wide organization be established, whether covert or otherwise. It doesn't even have to be official. It feels as though Western nations have been left defenceless without such a unifying structure. It is as if one side has been pursuing strategic hostility against another, while the other remains unaware and does nothing to respond. From one country to another, the same mechanisms and the same outcomes can be seen at work, yet the West

has remained fragmented, each nation left to face these challenges on its own.

Even if such an organization takes years to come to full strength, it would still mark meaningful progress, provided that it remains free from infiltration by the very elements it seeks to confront. Even the smallest trace of doubt, however slight, could risk infiltration, and that must never be allowed.

As long as it remains subtle and discreet, yet centralized and organized enough to effectively counter even a fraction of this subversive force, it would be a good start, and it would grow from there. Imagine hundreds of millions of people aligned with such an effort; the will for it already exists, as most people are weary of the systemic ongoing deterioration of the civilization. If done intelligently, strategically, and with commitment from individuals deeply loyal to their people, such an initiative would soon surpass the workings of the harmful apparatus. Even a slow beginning, steady as an ant, would still be a beginning in the right direction.

For the first decade maybe, the very existence of such an organization should remain entirely unknown. That is how one responds to subversion—by speaking its own language, but with integrity of purpose. The idea deserves consideration: there must be some form of civilizational-scale infrastructure capable of providing protection against this influence. Without it, the response remains fragmented, decentralized, divided by borders, and largely ineffective against an apparently well-coordinated adversary that appears to operate across nations.

I will repeat it again: if an organized covert force is dismantling civilization piece by piece, then civilization itself needs an equally subtle, centralized, and loyal counter-force to defend it, quietly, intelligently, and effectively. National measures in individual nations

against such threats have apparently not been sufficient. Therefore, these mechanisms will have to be civilization-wide, to match the true gravity of the situation.

Even better would be multiple such organizations, so many that this machinery becomes disoriented and unable to comprehend what is happening. Each could be compartmentalized and unaware of the others. Size would not matter: some would fail, others would find their footing. If we can make that system work, it would be nothing short of commendable. It all comes down to the depth of passion one holds for protecting Western nations from this existential threat. These steps are necessary, and they are the rightful pursuit of Western nations.

In terms of democratic accountability, the scale of harm perpetrated by this subversive force already exceeds any amount of anxiety that should hold back this need for defence. The latter could realistically not even approach a fraction of the concern posed by the current dysfunction. Against that backdrop, the rationale for this defensive organization is very reasonable. When a formal, civilization-wide structure is currently not feasible, a provisional safeguarding body is a necessity. Faced with the alternative of allowing Western nations to be hollowed out from within at such a concerning pace and intensity, the choice is not difficult.

Secondly but not least, there should also be another provisional organization tasked with the articulation and advancement of the overarching strategic interests of Western civilization, at least until a more formal mechanism is capable of assuming that role. At present, the West as a civilization seems to lack clearly defined short, medium, and long-term objectives, as well as coherent frameworks for identifying areas that require vigilance, civilizational-defence, consolidation, or strategic expansion.

Without a central body capable of synthesizing long-term interests, anticipating and addressing threats, and guiding collective priorities, vast civilizational potential remains unrealised. The absence of such mechanisms leaves critical vulnerabilities unmonitored, strengths underdeveloped, and opportunities squandered. Until a cross-national structure emerges across Western nations, one that serves the actual strategic interests of the populations it represents rather than current globalist structures that have been actively opposing them, an ad hoc organization devoted to strategic clarity and civilizational stewardship is not optional. It is a need. This provisional organization might have to work silently and subtly too, at first.

If there were an intelligent effort to mobilize the vast, nearly uncountable advantages the West possesses as a civilization, its renewal would be guaranteed to be inevitable. I cannot realistically enumerate all the variables, domains, spheres, layers, and interlocking forces that make Western nations immeasurably more powerful than they are commonly perceived to be. While it is widely understood that Western countries comprise much of the First World, their true civilizational strength, if coherently leveraged, remains profoundly underestimated.

What is lacking is not capability, but coordination. In the absence of a unifying strategic direction, these advantages remain fragmented and underutilized. When aligned by deliberate intent, however, they would represent a civilizational force unmatched in power, depth, and resilience.

Unifying Western International Relations

I acknowledge that this may be too cliché or not truly practical at present. Even so, it is worth consideration, even if only as a conceptual starting point. Even partial application could be useful.

For too long, the West has been treated as a collection of nations, occasionally aligned, frequently competing, and often distracted by internal disagreements. This fragmentation has likely made it vulnerable to a force that thrives on divide-and-conquer tactics. The antidote might be to reimagine the entire West not as a collection of isolated states, but as a civilizational bloc united by shared values, conscious of common threats, and guided by a collective destiny.

Approaching the world this way might subtly change underlying dynamics. Allies outside the West must be engaged with clarity and honesty. Countries like China, India, Japan, South Korea, and others face many of the same globalist agendas. I believe these nations are natural allies of the West. Any attempt at triangulation or artificial manufacturing of mistrust and hostility between these nations and the Western nations should be seen for what it is. There might be issues such as technology transfer and economic competitions, but those are trivial and do not diminish mutual respect and admiration.

By rightly framing the struggle as not merely "Western survival" but as a defence of humanity itself, the West can build a coalition of civilizations—nations united not by geography but by their shared resistance to the subversive influence. Subtly but persistently, allies must be educated about the global dangers of this hidden apparatus: how it destabilizes and degenerates societies, corrupts leadership, and erodes progress wherever it operates. It ensures that when pressure comes, these nations recognize the hand behind it.

This could also mean building alliances that go beyond convenience—deep, resilient partnerships rooted in shared purpose.

It also means standing openly with friendly governments under pressure. Too often, Western-aligned nations appear to have been destabilized through manufactured uprisings, undermined democratic processes, economic sabotage, or infiltration campaigns. When the West stands aside as its allies are undermined, it could erode its own leverage and moral authority. But by committing to defend its partners, it fortifies the entire civilizational shield.

Limited Accountability and Forgiveness for the Subversive Actors

Although aspects of this section overlap with previous material, their importance makes it necessary to address them again with additional clarity.

I think the rest of the sane world should follow a path of forgiveness, one rooted in honesty, goodwill, and a genuine desire for peace. Whoever or whatever this force may be, we wish them no ill will and no harm, nor will we ever. If they persist in causing harm, we will, of course, have to defend ourselves, but even then, the response should be guided by justice and measured accountability, never vengeance. In truth, even that is not something we seek. Our only wish is that they allow the civilization to be left alone.

They should be met not with hatred, but with cautious goodwill, for even their past misdeeds can be forgiven if they demonstrate a sincere willingness to pursue lasting harmony. That harmony must be genuine, enduring, and mutually beneficial. Our approach should remain firm and principled, neither naïve nor complacent, yet always guided by a love of peace and a steadfast commitment to coexistence.

My reason for suggesting this approach is simple: it aligns with the very nature of Western Civilization. This is the path the West has always chosen: patient, decent, and guided by empathy. No other

civilization, if subjected to the same degree of malice and injustice, would have responded with such restraint and understanding.

I know there will probably be an unending list of past grievances and perceived slights and wrongs going as far back as three trillion years ago but things like these usually go both ways, and the ongoing malicious schemes against Western societies would make the possible case of unlimited victimhood on the opposite party a bit weaker.

I should acknowledge that while it is reasonable to assume that grievances would exist, this remains an assumption rather than a statement of established fact.

And this was not stated to absolve past mistakes, including those made by the West, but there comes a point where continual reference to distant history ceases to justify present conduct. If there is any truth to my assumption, I believe it is long past time to move beyond living in the grievances of decades or centuries ago. Those responsible for ongoing harm should recognize that the enduring decency of Western societies should not have been met with hostility, but with respect and reciprocity.

Another reason I suggest this approach is that I believe there may be an element of paranoia within this apparatus. Apparently having committed harmful acts for so long, they may have reached a point where, in their distorted perception, their survival depends on concealing their misdeeds, perhaps even through the outright elimination of victims who may have started to understand the gravity of the harm inflicted. This may explain the relentless hostility directed toward the very existence of Western populations. In their eyes, the "enemy" may now appear to be Western Civilization itself, and most likely, that could indeed be the case. But it would not end there. After the West, their focus would inevitably turn to others, perhaps Asian

nations such as China and Japan, and eventually to the rest of the world.

If the West is weakened, it will eventually be their turn, and those nations won't stand a chance. I say this grounded in the principles of political *realism.*

It never stops. It will not stop. This machinery will likely destroy the world if they keep having it the way it is going. They will likely be at one-sided war with someone at all the time, or even everyone all the time whether overt or covert.

Even if some apparatus appears friendly and beneficial to other nations now, it might be because it would suit its goals for the time being, and that won't stay that way forever. Alliances and agreements don't mean anything to these influences in the long run. The goal of domination will eventually compel them to turn hostile against former associates.

This apparatus has consistently revealed a character that aligns very tightly with malignant psychological pathology. If the analysis in the psychology chapter holds, then I would like to stress that individuals with such traits naturally gravitate toward the highest levels of power, privilege, and status available. They genuinely believe they are above ordinary life. As a result, their behaviour almost inevitably places them on a collision course with others. What they naturally tend to seek is not participation or harmony, but total dominance and control.

Fantasies of unlimited power are a well-documented trait of individuals with such characters. Now place that trait within an apparatus that appears to have achieved unprecedented global influence, and the danger becomes obvious.

When successive achievements make the world domination appear attainable, the drive will intensify. There is already a push

toward "one world" in one form or another, an early sign pointing toward the efforts for that global control. The pursuit would become aggressive and uncompromising with time. Obviously, the world doesn't work that way. This would naturally make them secretly hostile toward other nations, usually at the expense of common sense, law and order, decency, morality, humanity, and despite species-level consequences.

If we suppose that the assertions made above are true, then it should be mentioned that none of this is necessary. These individuals could live ordinary lives gracefully and they will be respected; it is never too late. They wouldn't need grand global designs. Ordinary life is much more rewarding than anything grandiose. The rest of society, including the West and normal individuals more broadly, are always more than willing to coexist, compromise, and leave others in peace. It is never the majority or regular people that escalate. Dysfunction, conflict, and rupture are almost always initiated by the malicious party, whether at the individual level or on a broader scale. Normal people seek distance from harm, not domination over others.

Yet, even such individuals will not be beyond hope. When accountability becomes inevitable, they could still redirect their energy toward less destructive pursuits. The path forward for civilization, therefore, would lie in maintaining measured accountability toward possible perpetrators, while also offering reassurance to ease their paranoia. We must find a balanced approach that would guide them gradually toward coexistence and harmony. They should be regarded as deeply damaged individuals in need of help; direct confrontation is not needed. This book takes precisely that approach: combining limited accountability with understanding, reminding them that the world is not purely black and white, and that there is always a path toward reconciliation and peace.

They will continue to hear voices of anger and frustration over their past actions, which is only natural and a reflection of ordinary human emotion. At present, it is the West that stands as the greatest victim of the injustices and harm. If Western voices are more vocal than others, it is only natural, and entirely understandable.

Yet none of this will give them any real cause for concern; life will go on, and they will still prosper. Existing backlash is bound to subside over time, and the messages of forgiveness and mutual understanding will even hasten this decline, but it will have to be built on genuine desire. There will be no meaningful backlash so long as this one-sided aggression ceases. The perpetrators of harm will have to stop provoking decent and well-intentioned people. If such possible individuals were to simply refrain from these destructive behaviours, they would have nothing to be concerned about. However, if these apparent hostilities and policies continue escalating, the West will, of course, take steps to safeguard itself.

We are not living in the Medieval Ages anymore; the world is no longer black and white. Yet it seems that this machinery still might perceive it that way. This is not the third world, and yet it appears intent on turning the Western nations into one, believing it will somehow remain in control, which could not be further from reality. The subversive machinery may resent the West now, but it is this very West they would long for if ever forced to live with the consequences of their own actions.

Harm directed against Western populations must be a line that is never crossed again. There is nothing to negotiate when it comes to ending atrocities. Crimes and deliberate subversion are not anyone's entitlement. There are always constructive, peaceful, and ethical ways to pursue one's interests; malicious and criminal methods are not among them.

I understand that such a transition cannot happen overnight. It will take time. That is acceptable, as long as the direction is honest and the intent is sincere. This is why I have consistently used the word "subtly" when speaking about the cessation of harm. It is a deliberate choice. It reflects my belief that an off-ramp must be offered, one that is dignified, patient, seamless, and even hopeful for all involved, including those who might have caused harm.

If the harm begins to recede soon, this entire episode should remain just that: a strange and troubling moment in history, one we chose not to dissect any further once it passed.

POSSIBLE COMPLEX DYNAMICS AT PLAY WITHIN THE SUBVERSIVE APPARATUS

As mentioned, there is a possibility that, for this harmful entity, subversion has become a means of survival. Perhaps they do not genuinely wish to engage in wrongdoing, but feel trapped, convinced that they have no other choice. I am not taking sides, nor can I claim to know whether this is truly the case, though I sincerely hope it is. After all, things are sometimes more complex than they appear on the surface.

In such an environment, if individuals within their ranks demand that the sabotage continues, how likely is it that others, perhaps even the reasonable ones, would openly resist? What alternatives would they see if they believed the world hated them, and that their only option was to protect themselves at all costs? In circumstances like these, it is not surprising that those with disordered personalities, or ruthless dispositions, could rise to the top. Even the saner voices within such circles might look irrational for opposing them, because survival would seem to require compliance. I cannot say for certain whether this is the case. But if there is even a slight chance that it is,

then it is only fair to consider forgiveness and mutual understanding as possible solutions.

I fully believe that the path forward for the West, and for all, lies not only in resisting subversion and effective safeguarding, but in creating space where even those caught in it can step back, and choose a different course.

Those individuals, too, would have families, mothers, children—all innocent souls who share the same hopes and vulnerabilities as the rest of us. Even if we cannot forget the deeds, we can still recognize our shared humanity. In the end, we are all on the same side. The world must find a middle path forward, one that restores balance, justice, and peace. Genuinely forgiving past actions and letting go, so that the harm can dissolve seamlessly, is both a moral and logical necessity.

If someone moderate enough within these perpetrators were to bring about a genuine course correction—to reform the belief systems that may be driving instability across the world—they would be remembered as heroes, not only within their own ranks but for all of humanity, even if the world never knows their names. What may once have worked, or seemed necessary in the past, is no longer relevant or sustainable; those belief systems now need to evolve. Pursuits toward global power will only result in ridicule and counterproductive results. Pointless grandiose quests, games, and hobbies must stop.

I now summarise this important and long section: we must strive to understand even the concerns of those who may have caused harm. I believe it is essential to consider, truthfully and sincerely, the possibility of forgiveness, even for the perpetrators. For what has unfolded over the past decades, perhaps even a century—the long subversion of Western Civilization—can be brought to an end

through understanding and forgiveness. If we can achieve that, it will be a true triumph. And should such understanding come to pass, it must be founded on complete honesty and goodwill, both from the rest of us, and, we can only hope, from this apparent apparatus itself.

Identifying and Exposing the Patterns of Subversion, Hostility, and Atrocities

Even with olive branches that the West should keep offering as a priority, self-defence still cannot be overlooked.

This machine appears to flourish on its invisibility. It seems to thrive in shadows, using confusion and distraction to make its work appear either random, accidental, imaginary, or mediated through layers of proxies. Once these methods are recognized for what they are, the spell begins to break. Subversion only works when people cannot see the hand behind it; when the curtain is pulled back, its power collapses.

That is why exposing the patterns matters more than exposing names. Manufactured large-scale atrocities, crimes, relentless blame-shifting, harmful policy patterns across Western nations, and the sowing of mistrust, all seem to follow predictable cycles. When people can see these cycles, the mystique disappears. What once felt overwhelming becomes mechanical and often clumsy.

This is less about speculation and more about clarity. The chaos does not appear to be natural, and the patterns and evidence that the book has provided attest to this. When citizens understand how narratives are bent, how crises are staged, and how fear is weaponized, they are less likely to be deceived and more likely to stand firm, and that is a vital step towards the repair of the damages.

Masses should be able to recognize the signs of narrative manipulation in real time: the sudden scapegoats, the "accidents" that

appear to time with certain events, or the coordinated outrage that erupts from nowhere.

This apparatus seems to pervasively indulge in blame shifting and blame scattering. Crimes may be committed, atrocities unfold, lives are upended, and then everything is quietly swept under the rug with a shrug, a smear, or a convenient distraction. The perpetrators could thrive on this cycle: do harm, bury the evidence, shift the blame, scatter the narrative, gaslight, attack the victims, until nobody knows what to believe. This is how dark deeds survive: not because they are invisible, but because they are never openly understood for what they are.

Ideally, every act of wrongdoing must be dragged into daylight, labelled clearly, and remembered publicly. When black deeds are hidden, they repeat. When they are named, documented, and remembered, the cycle of crimes becomes unsustainable.

This is more than justice, it is survival. Without collective memory, sabotage and crimes become cyclical. The best antidote is relentless transparency—naming, documenting, recording, and teaching the patterns of subversion so they cannot be repeated with the same ease. This is how civilizations inoculate themselves against covert tyranny.

Crimes against innocent people, even if they are against just one person, cannot continue. While organic crime does occur, innocent people must not be forced to pay with their lives because of the malice directed at the West.

If some hidden forces were ever to engage in their dark deeds again, they should come to regret it. People must no longer be silenced, coerced, or threatened. While I do not advocate for tit for tat, there must at least be subtle yet firm ways to remind the

perpetrators of their misdeeds, if those misdeeds do occur, so that they do not escape accountability again for their actions.

The West must find its voice again, not a whisper, not an apology. It must call terrorism by its name. It must call patterns of tyranny by their name. And it must do so openly, unapologetically, and consistently until the language of truth replaces the language of evasion. If evidence points to it, let the world remember ill deeds not as unfortunate accidents of history but as deliberate acts of malice, crimes against humanity and the civilization itself.

Monitoring the Malicious

This section might also be a little reiteration of the previous sections, but it is important nonetheless.

Having lived within dysfunctional and malevolent dynamics for much of my life, I have learned an undeniable lesson: those who dedicate themselves solely to constructive pursuits often underestimate the reach and relentlessness of destructive intent. In societies built on good faith, cooperation, and openness, people don't normally imagine the true scale of calculated subversion, broad malice, or sabotage—until it is too late sometimes.

This applies to the West today. Its institutions are largely designed around transparency and collaboration, yet the very traits that make them productive also make them vulnerable. A portion of strategic energy must therefore be directed toward anticipating, detecting, and containing those who do not compete constructively.

Societies that value fairness and innovation will have to cultivate a parallel skill: vigilance. Guarding the constructive world from the destructive or manipulative one is not cynicism. Progress and protection must advance together.

Additionally, if there are actors with documented histories of pursuing harmful agendas, ignoring their continued activity out of discomfort or misplaced optimism does not make the risk disappear.

Careful, lawful observation of such actors and their known patterns of behaviour may therefore be necessary, not as a tool of repression, but as a means of prevention. Vigilance directed at demonstrated conduct is a basic requirement of safeguarding.

Enforcing Gatekeeping of Technology and Knowledge

The greatest damage has already been done. For a long period of time, Western nations have trained foreign talent on a massive scale, effectively transferring the very knowledge that now enables competitors to challenge them. This education, combined with decades of technology proliferation and outright industry transfer, has allowed competitors to understand and exploit stolen blueprints that would once have been far beyond their capacity. Had they not been taught the fundamentals or at least the cutting-edge knowledge of science and modern technology, lessons continually being handed to them by the West, they would not even have the ability to interpret or reproduce such technologies today.

Today, this proliferation often appears in softer disguises: research partnerships, international student programs, scholarships, corporate joint ventures, "market access," and "knowledge-sharing" agreements. From advanced US fighter aircraft blueprints leaked to rival militaries, to cyber-espionage rings with "thousands of hackers in every major Chinese city spending all day raiding Western corporate R&D"[168], to universities flooded with foreign students who

[168] Nicole Sganga, "Chinese Hackers Took Trillions in Intellectual Property from about 30 Multinational Companies," *CBS News*, May 4, 2022, https://www.cbsnews.com/news/chinese-hackers-took-trillions-in-intellectual-property-from-about-30-multinational-companies/.

return home armed with cutting-edge expertise, the pattern remains the same. The result is an uneven playing field: Western societies shoulder the cost of innovation, while adversaries exploit the outcomes, and then compete, and even surpass the former.

What's needed is strict intellectual property safeguards, robust cyber defences, and hard walls around sensitive research. And then you have to take into account the subversive elements who will always apparently be lurking around to sabotage anything and everything in the West. They will be looking to leak Western technologies to competitor nations via various subtle mechanisms, and who knows what else, as they have apparently done for almost a century.

Foreign training in sensitive fields should be limited, ideally nil, with priority given to cultivating and funding local talent. Corporations must abandon the illusion that short-term profits justify outsourcing innovation pipelines. Enforcing stricter vetting of joint ventures, export controls, and licensing agreements is not paranoia.

Governments must establish red zones of research that cannot be transferred abroad, even under the guise of civilian applications, without stringent oversight and long-term benefit guarantees.

Where theft or bad faith is detected, consequences must be swift and public: trade sanctions, funding withdrawals, legal prosecution, and naming-and-shaming in international forums.

Technologies such as semiconductors, advanced materials, space systems, biotechnology, advanced physics, and AI must be treated as strategic assets, guarded with the same seriousness once reserved for nuclear arsenals.

Artificial intelligence is likely the most consequential technology of our time. Born in the West, and of Western conception and effort, it must remain under Western stewardship. Although, as expected, there has already been apparent instant proliferation of this

technology, the protection and explicit prioritization of Western AI advancement must now become paramount.

This one technology all alone has the potential to significantly reshape the global landscape in the years ahead, and it has the potential to attract immense fixation and energy from the subversive force.

If the West is to preserve its technological heritage, it cannot afford to see this innovation conceived and developed within its own sphere, only for others to recognize its value, commit vast resources to it, and ultimately erode a broader technological edge built over thousands of years. AI could become the foundation for most of the future technology. It could also create technological shortcuts, aiding easy innovation toward the next generation of cutting-edge advancements. Added to the existing equation of sustained malicious efforts against the West, this technology could prove dangerous if it matures in the wrong hands. This risk **cannot** be overstated. AI must not go uncontested, and it requires vigilant safeguarding.

Also, AI cannot be allowed to be used to creep into Western militaries and serve as an opening for the compromise of weapon systems. This may represent the most significant systemic military risk, given the central role AI is set to play in future advanced technologies and defence systems.

This tech alone could be considered among the top long-term priorities. It should be advanced across multiple organisations, companies, and research centres throughout the West. Western national institutions and loyal companies must lead the world in this technology. Doing so will require substantial resources, exceptional talent, and sustained commitment.

Lastly, brilliant minds, their work, their companies, and their contributions must be safeguarded from malicious interference, and unlawful pressures.

Restoring Institutional Integrity

Courts, regulators, bureaucracies, and watchdogs exist to uphold order, enforce justice, and guard the public from corruption. But when captured, they can become weapons against the very people they were created to protect. Instead of serving justice, they are sometimes observed to smother it. Instead of upholding law, they could twist it into a tool of covert tyranny. There are signs that institutions in some Western nations might have been compromised.

The West must restore institutional integrity. A captured institution is worse than none at all, because it creates the illusion of accountability while ensuring that accountability never arrives. When courts drag out cases for years until victims are bankrupt, while ignoring real predators—trust collapses, and with it, the entire civic fabric.

Radical transparency is important. Institutions should not operate as black boxes, insulated by jargon and legalism. Proceedings, rulings, and decision-making processes must be even more visible to the public. Secrecy breeds corruption; sunlight forces accountability.

Also, true accountability must be enforced. Abusing institutional power cannot be treated as business as usual. Judges, regulators, bureaucrats, and officials who act with bias, or corruption, or those who have fallen under the influence of subversive or shadowed interests, must face consequences proportionate to the harm they inflict. Without this, institutions merely recycle the same dysfunction with new faces.

The West must reforge its institutions into what they were always meant to be: impartial guardians, servants of the people, barriers against tyranny. Anything less leaves civilization exposed. DEI and politically-appointed individuals tend to corrupt these systems far more readily as compared to others. Even so, I have observed that in Western nations, there are always at least as many, if not far more, people of integrity within these institutions.

Economic Independence and Resilience

For decades, it appears that the West has allowed hidden levers of financial coercion to be placed in the hands of rivals—fragile supply chains stretching across hostile territories, and energy dependence vulnerable to blackmail by those who might wish to see Western nations weakened.

Breaking these chains might begin with rebuilding domestic strength. Industrial capacity cannot be outsourced indefinitely without consequence. Nations that once invented and manufactured the world's greatest technologies now sometimes find themselves importing the simplest goods. To restore resilience, key industries must return home, from semiconductors to pharmaceuticals, from defence equipment to critical infrastructure materials.

Energy independence is equally vital. History shows that civilizations reliant on their rivals for lifeblood, whether grain in ancient Rome, oil in the modern era, or electricity in today's interconnected grids, inevitably pay the price. The West must diversify its energy sources, invest boldly in innovation, and safeguard existing systems from sabotage, including policies that, under the banner of climate action, allow competitors to pollute freely while constraining Western economies.

Trade itself must also be reimagined. Also, rather than tying its prosperity to competitors who exploit interdependence, the West should cultivate diversified alliances and build supply chains anchored in trust, reciprocity, and genuine mutual benefit. This not only strengthens civilizational ties but insulates against weaponized globalization.

At the institutional level, the IMF, World Bank, and even central banking systems have long thought to have been leveraged as tools of manipulation. Debt traps are designed not to uplift but to bind nations into obedience. The West must guard against allowing its own countries and allies to be entrapped in similar ways, offering transparent alternatives that strengthen freedom rather than erode it. Economic cooperation must be restructured so that sovereignty is preserved, not auctioned.

I am not an economist, so I cannot explore every nuance of this subject. Independent, principled research institutions, honest economic experts, and national leaders are far better positioned to propose sound, practical solutions.

Safeguarding Corporations and Other Large Non-State Actors from Coercion and Capture

Large corporations today wield immense influence over societies. Consider Google, Facebook, Microsoft, and others. And these are only digital technology firms, merely the visible edge of a far larger corporate landscape.

Such corporations can become gateways for influence. Over decades, possibly longer, even a century, subversive actors and captured governments may have coerced, intimidated, or threatened businesses into compliance or takeovers, enabling gradual and often invisible deterioration. Once compromised, these corporations can

exert enormous leverage, not only over culture and information, but over other issues such as technology proliferation itself.

Western societies must reclaim their big businesses and corporations and ensure that these major enterprises remain loyal to the societies they serve, free from coercion, criminal pressure, hostile capture, and intimidation.

If this dynamic is real, it is vital to correct it. Otherwise, power continues to concentrate not in societies, but in the hands of the subversive few. Also, loyal but struggling organisations must be supported and protected.

None of this is an argument that "corporations are bad." Many corporations are loyal to the societies that created them and function as stabilising pillars rather than threats. Not all corporations become compromised. Even when they do, they are not the driving force, but an instrument. In isolation, they are limited. When leveraged alongside broader mechanisms of subversion, they can become highly effective. Political parties, governments, regulatory bodies, and cultural institutions in Western nations appear to be used in the same way. The patterns suggest coordination at a level above any single actor. So, corporations are not the centre of gravity here. They seem to be just one among many in the service of something larger.

III. Demographic, Social, and Human Continuity

The true target of the malicious efforts outlined in previous chapters seems to be Western, European-descendent populations themselves. Defence framed around the protection of people and their interests, rather than states alone, is therefore more accurate and more honest. It reflects what is actually under threat and provides a far stronger

foundation for meaningful safeguards and solutions. I believe this should remain the central objective of any serious effort at defence.

This proposed shift in outlook may appear cliché or subtle, but its significance may be profound. If truly incorporated by governments, ideally, across Western nations, or at least by civilizational safeguards proposed in this book, it reorients priorities both morally and practically, placing them where they should belong. I think it cannot be treated as trivial.

With demographic continuity fracturing, the malicious force might have found an opening it has since been seen trying to exploit: cultural disruption and designs against people and sovereignty. This section addresses the most fundamental layer of civilizational resilience: the capacity of a people to reproduce, nourish, protect, and sustain themselves over time. This section treats population numbers, Western ethnic prosperity, and civilizational unity as foundational, not ideological.

Addressing and Reversing Declining Birth Rates

If there is one issue that stands above all others whenever I speak of "existential threats to Western nations," it is the declining birth rates. I find it difficult to understand why this is not a matter of widespread concern. If Western civilization were a single individual, this would quite literally be a matter of life and death, and in many ways, it is.

If the populations of Western nations continue to dwindle, it will not be a peaceful, natural decline but literally the single biggest catalyst of widespread tyranny and misery in nations where only subversion and covert malice have worked until this point. It will mean subversive elements and so forth likely turning Western nations into third world tyrannies. It won't remain covert anymore if Western populations are not able to keep their own countries in their own

control. People in Western nations will likely not remain safe in their own cities.

As someone from outside the West, I have witnessed these patterns throughout my life: it is usually either high admiration or unnatural and shockingly high amount of unfounded resentment when it comes to the West. I'm talking as a non-Western individual from a lived experience.

Also, there exists a lot of toxic mix of emotions and behaviours that is largely alien to Western societies, yet very rife in many parts of the world, and as common as air. This is not speculation. Much of the Western populations have not faced them directly, though they have increasingly encountered them indirectly and covertly, as the patterns described in this book suggest. It is a very nasty set of behaviours and emotions.

This is simply a warning that deserves to be stated plainly. Truth cannot be softened when the consequences are far-reaching. Calling for caution, foresight, and the prevention of avoidable crises is not a call for division. It is not rooted in bitterness. It is a call for seriousness, especially as unresolved issues like collapsing birth rates threaten long-term security if they are not addressed decisively.

Birth rates across Europe, North America, and other Western societies have fallen below replacement levels for decades. What was once an unnoticed demographic trend has become a civilisational emergency. Without people, there is no culture, no economy, no innovation, no civilisation to defend.

I have repeated this multiple times, more than any other statement, and I will restate this again: the West represented nearly one-third of the world's population at the dawn of the 20th century. Today, it is closer to one-tenth, a fall from 33% to 10%, and the trajectory continues downward exponentially fast. This is not simply

a matter of fewer or more children, it is a matter of civilisational survival.

It is not some boring stat, it affects everyone personally, effects already present in daily life, bound to become unbearable in the coming decades.

Declining birth rates are accelerated by forces that exploit demographic vulnerability. Immigration and "Open borders" pressure has been used as a "solution."

Cultural indoctrination has glorified atomisation, hyper-individualism, and careerism while demeaning family life as old-fashioned or oppressive.

Self-imposed national economic difficulties have made parenting prohibitively expensive through hollowed-out national economies, housing crises, unstable employment, and weakened social safety nets. The result is not simply fewer children—it increasingly looks like it's a civilisation engineered into demographic submission, leaving it unable to project strength or even sustain itself.

To restore balance, the West must relearn what every flourishing civilisation has known: the strength of a people rests in their ability to regenerate themselves through families. From ancient Rome, which thrived when its citizens multiplied, to post-war Europe and America, which rebuilt through baby booms, history shows that population renewal is the cornerstone of civilisational survival.

Decline is not destiny; it is a choice, and it can be reversed. However, declining birth rates are not like temporary recessions or political swings. They are exponential trajectories. Once the balance tips too far, civilisations find themselves unable to reverse the decline. Entire cultures, languages, and histories can vanish in a matter of generations.

The West must recognise this as its most urgent priority—the effort for renewal. Every child born into this civilisation is a declaration that the story is not over, and that there is a future worth fighting for.

The path is clear: prioritise families, celebrate life, and invest in the future. The question is whether the West will take it in time.

Reversing the decline requires a coordinated and tireless cultural, political, and economic effort, and it doesn't always have to be all these elements working in conjunction. With subversive influences having taken root in many nations across Western civilization, it is important to start from whatever resources are available.

While I'm not an expert in this domain, there are some ideas that sound promising.

A Multi-Layered Solution:

- Family-friendly, positive parenting attitudes in every individual in the West, even if mainstream indoctrination tells otherwise
- Giving up comforts of single life for the sake of collective well-being
- Having at least 3-5 or maybe 5+ children as a social norm
- Celebrating parenthood and large families as acts of strength, not burdens
- Countering propaganda that equates fulfilment only with career or consumption
- Promoting role models who exemplify the dignity and heroism of raising large families
- Acknowledging possible financial hurdles when it comes to large families but making it happen anyway

- Reforming education systems to highlight the civilisational importance of family and continuity
- Guarding against indoctrination that demonises parental authority or stigmatises traditional family life
- Rejecting demographic shortcuts
- Family-friendly economies
- Making housing affordable for young families
- Providing tax relief and subsidies for parents, especially those with larger families
- Ensuring stable employment and wages that allow one parent to prioritise parenting if desired

Thankfully, the illusion/indoctrination that mass immigration can replace native populations without consequence is not widely accepted.

This is the most significant and crucial subject I have addressed in this book. There will be plethora of solutions to this but only if there is a will.

One comparison that is often made tends to make people passive. No, this is nothing like the fall of Rome. What we are witnessing now is an unprecedented existential crisis, not on the scale of a single empire or country, but on the scale of an entire race, civilization, and peoples. When Rome fell, the Germanic people replaced it. Today, however, whether it is Italians, Germans, Celts, Britons, Vikings, or Danes, every population is shrinking, while populations elsewhere in the world are growing exponentially. To equate this situation with the fall of Rome is to vastly underestimate its scope and gravity.

Lastly, there are emerging technologies on the verge of becoming widely available that could, in time, help reverse the decline across

Western nations. It is vital that these innovations be recognized and prioritized as a matter of immense civilizational importance. For younger individuals who may feel hesitant or uncertain about being a parent in their twenties, these advancements could provide new options and possibilities, potentially transforming the entire demographic landscape.

For any of this to succeed, there must be passion, widespread awareness, and a shared, ongoing sense of responsibility among the populations. I will say it again: where there is a will, there is a way. Simply speaking openly about this critical existential challenge is an important first step, but much more will be required from every individual within Western societies.

The Preservation of Natural Food Systems

The preservation of traditional food systems is a strategic necessity at this point and it will soon be clear why. Small and mid-scale local farmers, traditional livestock practices, and regionally adapted agriculture have sustained regions for thousands of years. These systems are resilient, decentralized, and culturally embedded. They anchor communities, protect rural economies, and preserve generational knowledge that cannot be replicated by industrial substitutes. Steps should be taken to ensure that small farmers do not continue being rendered unprofitable.

The large-scale corporation acquisition of farmland across Western nations, the growing restrictions on food production, and the policy environments that steadily make independent farming unprofitable may point to more than random agendas.

Viewed through the lens of consistently-observed malicious patterns, these developments could signal a slower, more strategic objective. Over time, such phenomena could translate into internal

pressure points, coercion, or crises, including the denial of food, artificial scarcity, or even some indirect form of famine in the distant future, something that could conveniently be employed alongside other artificial crises with devastating consequences. If the hollowing out of Western societies continues unchecked, scenarios that now seem unlikely may become conceivable in the far future. Should there be any truth to the dynamics outlined in the psychology chapter, this trajectory is plausible. These are precisely the kinds of grandiose schemes that individuals with such disorders are known to pursue.

What's concerning, as discussed earlier, is that the phenomenon of the disruption of independent farms and farmers is happening in unison across the West, just like some of the other such crises discussed earlier in the book.

Farms in the hands of corporations could also be utilized for more immediate designs, such as poisoning of food. The recent push for synthetic food for diets points to the possibility that organic food seems to hold some importance for the malicious machinery. Perhaps it's because food shapes health, fertility, cognitive development, and cultural continuity. Replacing healthy meat, dairy, grains, and produce with quietly poisoned corporate food severs populations from the right to basic health and long-tested nutritional foundations and risks further decline in demographic makeup.

Protecting natural food systems means safeguarding farmer autonomy, maintaining diverse local production, halting corporate encroachment, and ensuring that environmental stewardship is pursued through balance and innovation rather than prohibition and coercion. Sustainability should enhance food quality and availability, not reduce them.

Complete Reversal of Decades-Old Unnatural Immigration and Demographic Dynamics

What has defined Western nations for millennia, in fact always, has been their native populations. There is absolutely no justification to deny a nation…. its nation.

The demographic makeup of Western nations must be restored to what makes them inherently Western. The world is home to beautiful cultures, each unique and deserving of preservation. As a non-Western individual, I would never condone turning South Asia into Africa, or Africa into South Asia—just as a Chinese individual would not condone transforming China into South Asia, Africa, or Europe.

Yet, disturbingly, this is already occurring relentlessly in one specific part of the world affecting a single demographic group: Western nations. I will not condone gradually erasing what makes the West into a mix of Africa, South Asia, or other regions.

As you might expect, the populations of Western nations have never consented to this. They never asked for it. This has been a process spanning decades, reaching as far back as the mid-twentieth century, especially picking steam since 2000s.

The disregard of the expressed wishes of native populations cannot stand as a permanent burden on Western nations; it rests on no moral foundation.

In nations such as China or those of the Middle East, altering the identity and demographics of native populations is simply not permitted, no matter how severe the demand for external labour may be. One can live there for forty years and still never become a citizen. This reality is openly acknowledged, enforced, and accepted. Yet this same, obvious principle has been blatantly disregarded in Western nations alone. "Labour shortages" appears to be far often used as a

pretext than a genuine necessity. Where real labour shortages do exist, such as in many Middle Eastern nations, the response is straightforward: foreign workers are admitted, but citizenship is not offered.

Just as it is not deemed "racist" or "far-right" for those countries—indeed, for virtually every country on earth other than Western ones—to preserve their demographic continuity, it is neither "racist" nor "far-right" to ask for the same standard in Western nations. The entire rest of the wide world might be about perhaps 50 folds more "far-right" than any movement in the West today that rightly seeks to protect what makes the West…. the West. I say fifty folds because they have never as much as even entertained what the West has endured silently for seventy years or so.

The fact that Western nations deviated from this practice for such a prolonged time does not grant those policies permanence, legitimacy, or moral authority. They do not bear any significance.

What has been enacted against democratic will is bound to, eventually, be corrected through democratic will. There are many viable paths to gradually restore the demographic balance and those paths will inevitably be explored.

When I say that even individuals holding formal Western citizenship cannot overstay their welcome indefinitely, I mean that legal paperwork alone does not transform someone into the people of a nation. There are gradual, slow, and humane ways, non-dramatic and polite ones to reverse this dynamic, ways which will have to be explored eventually. There will be ways where everyone will be pleased, and even better options will present themselves for non-native populations. And it can all be voluntary. Everyone will be happy.

However, this remains a fact: you do not become French merely through documents or by being born there. Native French people are the French, and the same principle applies to every nation on earth, not just the West.

Internal migrations are natural and have taken place everywhere in the world. Germanic peoples have moved across Europe, and that is all natural. What is not natural in the twenty-first century is the continual influx of distant cultures with incompatible ways of life, introduced in persistent waves against the expressed wishes of the population.

In my view, Western nations, like all nations, can reasonably host a limited foreign population, perhaps two to five percent at most at any given time, and even that presence cannot be permanent; only until that labour is needed.

Yes, there are exceptions. Genuinely persecuted individuals may require refuge. Yes, extraordinary individuals who have served their host nations have historically been granted citizenship, even in countries as restrictive as China. Those principles can apply here as well.

But this demographic dynamic that has persisted for more than half a century is not natural, not inevitable, and not permanent. At some point, it will have to be reversed.

HOW SOCIETIES RECOVER FROM LOW-BIRTH RATES, AND HOW THAT RECOVERY IS BLOCKED

Low birth rates alone do not constitute an existential crisis. Over time, societies tend to collectively self-correct as cultural norms, priorities, and lifestyles adapt, particularly when such pressures persist for such a vastly long time. Populations on civilizational scale gradually absorb long-standing challenges, especially the very existential ones. This capacity for adjustment is a natural feature of human social behaviour.

It may take time, but it is always inevitable. Under normal circumstances, governments would also recognize these trends and act to correct them, often decisively.

The situation becomes existential only when declining birth rates are coupled with systematic gaslighting, deliberate minimization, and the demonization of legitimate concern, alongside industrial-scale, unending mass immigration and other imposed dynamics.

This is why the reversal of undemocratic immigration and demographic policies is essential. It is to make sure that natural societal adjustment can occur. Even in the absence of effective governmental action, demographic recovery is bound to become an inevitable collective outcome.

THE NECESSITY OF MAINTAINING A HEALTHY SHARE OF GLOBAL POPULATION

The composition of global demographics, and each civilization's place within it, must be considered both objectively and compassionately.

The West will have to strive to restore and sustain a healthy share of the world's population, just as any civilization is entitled to do. We all share this earth, and we all belong on it. But if that balance is not maintained, the long-term trajectory becomes bleak. When the Western populations are reduced to one person for every thirty or fifty people in the world, an inevitable result whether a few decades or a hundred years beyond 2100, the outcome is not coexistence.

Such population dynamics, once set in motion, do not slow, let alone reverse, easily. They compound over time. What begins as a ratio of less than one for every nine, as we already have today, does not naturally stabilize; it widens exponentially as other regions continue to grow. Once the ratio approaches one to every thirty people globally, even maintaining that share becomes increasingly

difficult. From there, decline accelerates even faster, and population shares can halve within decades. This is not conjecture. It is basic mathematics.

It is erasure by sheer numbers elsewhere, and, as we can already observe today, even within Western nations themselves. With the current trajectory, in the year 2100, Europe itself and most Western nations will be composed by at least one third of populations originating from Asia and Africa, if not half, even under the most conservative estimates.

An Ecosystem of Support for Victims

If the West is to resist and recover, it must build not only defences against subversion but also an ecosystem of support for those who suffer its blows.

If a judge, a politician, or any other individual attempts to do the right thing and is then targeted for it, the response does not necessarily have to be a retreat. It can be multiplication when appropriate. One act of integrity should be answered with ten more, across domains and across the West. Only collective reinforcement can raise the cost of retaliation high enough to deter it from happening again.

This support cannot be token or symbolic. It must be structural, resilient, and deeply human. Tyrannies thrive by isolating their victims, convincing them that they are alone, powerless, and without recourse. The antidote is the opposite: networks of solidarity that ensure no one faces the predators in silence.

The patterns of sabotage suggest that targets could also be the West's brightest minds. Sometimes researchers, entrepreneurs, and artists are pressured, silenced, or robbed of their breakthroughs.

Victims of such behaviour often face tangible losses: careers derailed, reputations destroyed, finances drained. They should be supported.

Governments alone cannot sustain such an ecosystem. Civil society, companies, and independent institutions must step forward. Corporations that benefit from Western talent have an obligation to protect it, not just profit from it. Universities, churches, NGOs, and media must become sanctuaries of truth and support, not extensions of manipulation. Allies must form coalitions, pooling resources to ensure that even the smallest victim of this machinery is not abandoned.

An ecosystem of support does more than aid victims, it flips the script of covert tyranny itself. When victims are met with recognition, healing, and solidarity, the wrongdoers lose their greatest weapon: the illusion that they are all-powerful.

The West must make a civilisational promise: *no one who resists tyranny will stand alone.* With structures of protection, care, and recovery, resilience becomes not just an individual struggle but a collective triumph. And resilience, multiplied across millions, is one force no covert tyrant can match.

IV. Addressing Strategic Asymmetry

Western nations cannot indefinitely fund, educate, and empower parallel systems that undermine them. Strategic asymmetry must be corrected.

Ending the Systemic Squandering of Western Wealth and Resources

The systematic depletion of Western resources must be confronted and brought to an end. Whether this erosion occurs through

sprawling global initiatives, opaque aid frameworks, or long-standing international or domestic conventions that have long escaped scrutiny, each of these mechanisms must be re-examined, audited, and, where necessary, dismantled.

As outlined earlier, this form of depletion rarely takes the shape of overt theft. It operates through normalized conventions, inherited obligations, and spending habits that no longer serve the societies that finance them. What sometimes persist is not because it is effective, but because it has become unquestioned.

Seemingly modest policy choices, small shifts in trade terms, subsidies, grants, or foreign allocations, can, over time, redirect vast sums of wealth outward. Accumulated across years, such decisions translate into consequences measured not in millions or billions, but in trillions.

When policymaking becomes habitual and insulated by complexity, accountability steadily erodes. What began as discretionary choices harden into permanent structures. A corrective path forward requires breaking this inertia, restoring transparency, and re-anchoring economic decision-making in the long-term interests and sustainability of Western societies themselves.

Although it is generally not ideal for a book to make political statements, but out of fairness, it had to be stated at least once. And this is more of an observation: viewed strictly through the lens of this book, and things I learned just recently during the writing of this book, President Trump and his team repeatedly appear to favour policies which are in the genuine interests of their country and people. Policies that once seemed minor or merely tactical revealed, upon closer examination, a deeper coherence and long-term rationale. As this book unfolded, that pattern became increasingly difficult to ignore.

Wrapping Up Teaching Foreign Talent in Western Universities

For decades, the subversive system might have carefully built the illusion that foreign enrolment and "international talent" are indispensable to local economies. But this would be a false narrative, one that has apparently been allowed to harden into a norm.

Tuition fees from foreign students do not sustain Western nations; they weaken them by hollowing out the civilization's hard-earned competitive edge. Scholarships granted to thousands of top foreign minds annually further accelerate the erosion. Additionally, international student programs serve as a surprisingly significant pathway for high regular immigration.

Western universities must find alternative revenue models that do not compromise the interests of their own populations.

The subversive apparatus thrives on these manufactured dependencies. It seems to feed on the infighting, the institutional roadblocks, and the false economic incentives that bind Western universities to a system designed to dismantle their own advantage. Breaking free will be uncomfortable, even costly at first, but survival often demands difficult steps.

Nations in the West must explore ways, including targeted government incentives, to fund universities willing to put a stop to this phenomenon. This is not just about civilian technology; every engineer trained in the West, every blueprint exported, every lab partnership risks bleeding into stolen military applications.

The export of Western education to foreign campuses must also be rethought and stopped.

Western populations are being gaslit into believing that foreign talent outperforms their own, even as centuries of Western ingenuity stands as proof of the opposite. The very engine of modern science,

technology, and innovation is overwhelmingly Western. Yet the propaganda continues, eroding confidence and sowing division, painting Western populations as somehow inadequate. This is not only untrue, it is dangerous.

Scholarships for non-Western foreign talent should be significantly reduced, if not outright abolished, with those resources redirected toward supporting local students instead. Certain organizations with globalist orientations, such as the Gates Foundation, also fund scholarships for foreign students at leading Western universities, as well as other international initiatives discussed in earlier sections.

The West owes its knowledge to no one. It does not need to educate its own undoing.

Wrapping Up Global "Humanitarian Aid," and "International Development" Initiatives

Why is it the responsibility of Western taxpayer to bankroll endless "international development" programs that look less like aid and more like calculated designs and schemes? Why are Western citizens told to tighten their belts while the rest of the world is showered with projects? Why do Western governments continue to attempt to strip their own populations of basic necessities—food, healthcare, energy, even meat? The contradiction is glaring.

Populations in other regions are expanding at worrying rates, doubling every few decades. This is my prediction: this is not sustainable, and it will be the single greatest concern for humanity within two or three generations. Yet instead of addressing that reality, globalist organizations keep pouring vast sums into a plethora of "capacity building" and "humanitarian aid" projects that only fuel the cycle. If climate change is truly the crisis they claim it is, then this

unchecked population growth and forced redistribution is the real driver. But on that point, there is silence.

For millennia, these regions sustained themselves through locally balanced populations and self-reliant ways of living. People knew how to survive, manage their ecosystems, and adapt to their environments without outside interference. They did not need the heavy hand of globally funded disruption. I grew up in one of those regions, and I know firsthand that most of us would never have welcomed such artificial meddling. I used to worry about this population explosion and the resultant quality of life on national scale steeply going down the drain long before I learned that global organizations had been actively encouraging and promoting this unnatural growth—long before I even understood what 'globalist' influence truly meant.

Yes, when there is a famine, please send food. When there is a genuine emergency, offer immediate relief. But stop disrupting entire ecosystems and societies. Stop turning "aid" into dependency. Stop draining hundreds of billions of dollars from Western treasuries annually, money that could and should be spent safeguarding the survival of Western civilization itself.

The West does not owe the world endless lifelines. The rest of the world is not helpless, and it never has been.

It is a high time that the West recognizes that the international organizations such as the UN have failed when it comes to responsibly spending money they were entrusted with. They do not deserve to be funded this massively anymore. They should leave the worldwide emergency programs to individual Western and non-Western nations from now onwards. I believe the Western nations should directly fund and oversee relief efforts worldwide whenever there is a famine or any other emergency. The West does not need pouring hundreds of billions of dollars into the UN programs which

are then used to fund globalist agendas that bring misery even in countries they are supposedly helping.

As for development, it is not the responsibility of Western nations to underwrite modern development in every struggling country on earth in the name of altruism. As I just stated in previous paragraphs, throughout most of human history, Western nations did not rescue others, and those societies sustained themselves nonetheless. They should be allowed to do so again.

Even setting aside the hundreds of billions of dollars involved each year, forced development, perpetual hand-holding, and external babysitting remain fundamentally unnatural, even if they were free of cost. They disrupt the natural balance of global societies and distort local environments. They destabilize not only the regions subjected to them, but the planet as a whole. We all share this earth, and it can sustain only limited, balanced, and genuinely organic growth, particularly when population, environmental, and resource pressures are already acute. Dependence systems in the amount of now reaching billions of people, and growing even faster, is worrying.

Every society that shares this planet carries a responsibility for its own long-term self-sustenance.

V. Strategic Posture

This final section concerns posture rather than actions. When facing long-term, diffuse, and covert challenges, one of the greatest risks is misdirected urgency. These types of issues, in my opinion, are seldom resolved through spasms of outrage or short bursts of force, but through sustained clarity, emotional discipline, and strategic patience. A composed, peaceful, and focused approach deprives subversion of its oxygen, denies it pretexts, and allows awareness, incremental gains, and genuine solutions to compound over time. Subtle, sustained, and

unrelenting solutions can be far more potent than they initially might look on the surface. What follows is not a call for confrontation, but for endurance, coherence, and a long view worthy of a civilization that has survived far worse.

A Measured, Peaceful, and Focused Long-Term Approach

Most of the solutions I have outlined will not yield immediate results. The hidden malice and subversion directed against Western nations seems to have had decades, perhaps more than a century, to take shape and refine itself. It would be unrealistic to expect instant reversals. That said, the fastest path forward for all involved is one of reconciliation.

If reconciliation and mutual understanding do not come, the resolution of these challenges will still be inevitable. Progress may unfold gradually, yet it will arrive, perhaps sooner than expected. The West has long been defined by its resilience and ingenuity, and it will be once more.

The temptation in times of injustice is to lash out, to meet force with force, and to answer subversion with equal aggression. Yet such reactions rarely produce lasting victories. They give ammunition to the very forces of manipulation, which thrive on chaos and overreaction. Every rash act becomes a pretext for new mental gymnastics, every unreasonable outburst is reframed as proof of instability, and every uncontrolled surge of anger is turned against those who dared to question the injustice. This apparatus seems to be expert at manufacturing excuses. The West must not hand them any.

Instead, the answer must be a posture of measured strength: calm, patient, peaceful, but unrelenting. The West has already demonstrated remarkable restraint in the face of provocations that

would have shattered weaker civilizations. This resilience must be deepened into a deliberate strategy: frustrations are not to be suppressed, but channelled. Outrage becomes fuel for a long-term, methodical, and collective push for renewal.

This does not mean passivity. Quite the opposite. It means refusing to be baited into battles designed to exhaust, while steadily building the foundations of solutions that endure. By staying calm, collected, and strategic, the West ensures that when the subversive apparatus implodes, it is prepared to rebuild without repeating their errors.

The emphasis must also be on peace. Violence, repression, and hostility are the tools of covert perpetrators, tools that corrode the soul of any society that embraces them. To reclaim the future, the West must not mirror the very patterns it condemns. Instead, it must stand as a force of reconciliation, justice, and human dignity, resolute yet compassionate. This peaceful resolve strips legitimacy from the covert oppressors and makes their reactions and schemes look all the more naked and absurd.

Formation of Strict Future Boundaries

Finally, strict boundaries must be enforced even in seemingly minor aspects of Western society. Being laid back on small matters creates openings. Those openings, inevitably, are what sabotaging or exploitative influences need to gain a foothold.

Even minor wrongdoing, let alone large-scale ones, once this saga has concluded, must be treated seriously going forward. Any reintroduction, however small, of the forces the Western nations have already endured will again generate injustice, disrupt the social fabric, and corrode the civilization. Any little space for malign actors will

almost always tend to escalate into the gradual degeneration of any area of life they would operate in.

Threats directed at populations of hundreds of millions cannot be dismissed or allowed to fade with time. Even decades later, they demand permanent safeguards to ensure they never recur. Nothing else compares in gravity. Such threats identify precisely where systems must be strengthened and made foolproof. That level of protection will not be achieved until the West secures its military technology decisively. Exclusivity must be absolute. Proliferation and technology theft cannot be tolerated. This alone could ensure flawless protection achieved within a matter of years.

Until that is done, even periods of prosperity, stability, and success will conceal a vulnerability. Vigilance cannot lapse. Safeguards must evolve continuously, in real time, and without end.

The West's evergreen technological lead and broader ingenuity and excellence places it beyond any true comparison, including threats.

Circling back to the boundaries, they cannot be temporary either. They cannot exist for a mere decade, or even a century. The lessons of this malicious period must be integrated into long-term civilizational consciousness. Permanence is the point.

What we are experiencing now will eventually resolve. I consistently advocate for subtle restoration of the West and forgiveness. But forgiveness does not imply continued vulnerability. Subtle restoration does not justify weaker safeguards. Robust, even obsessive, protections must remain in place in perpetuity.

3rd Layer of Persecution Revisited

This section gave me pause for two reasons.

First, it requires the reader to entertain the possibility of something that appears cross-nationally organised and persistent yet plausibly deniable. For me, this has not been abstract. It has been a lived experience. I understand that some readers will be sceptical. I only ask that it be understood as my inference, formed after years of exposure to the same hostility and degeneracy across multiple countries.

Second, the experience itself gave me pause because of its magnitude. It has been so persistent, prolonged, and repeated across so many settings that writing its scale troubled me even more than the implication of coordination behind it.

I seriously considered leaving parts of this experience out of the book. Some are likely exhausting to read. They risk reader fatigue. They also risk sounding excessive, unbelievable, bizarre, even extreme.

But this has been my reality. I decided not to omit it.

As much as I dislike it, this is not narrative indulgence. It is a function of lived experience. The relentlessness of the account reflects the relentlessness of what is being lived.

With that said, I now return to the third layer of persecution introduced in the opening chapters of this book.

Time of Exile in Africa

I will start with my time in Africa.

There were several persistent themes I experienced in Africa that I need to address. Under normal circumstances it would be considered outrageous, but toward an isolated individual with almost

no support system in a foreign country, and with a long history of persecution, there was no restraint. I offered a brief preview of this earlier in the book.

My time in Africa was marked by patterns that cannot reasonably be interpreted as mere coincidences. For one example, for much of that period, across most of the houses where I lived, one among several recurring themes appeared again and again: someone would climb onto my roof and produce unbearable noise for hours at a time, and climb down whenever I tried to catch them. To their credit, this did not occur in Uganda or Kenya, and even in Rwanda some of the houses where I lived were unaffected.

However, for approximately three months in 2019, the entirety of 2020, parts of 2021, and about a half of 2022, amounting to well over two years in total, the places where I lived during those periods exposed me directly to this daily ordeal.

In Rwanda, most houses are built with steel roofs. The climate is stable throughout the year, with alternating dry and rainy seasons but little variation in temperature, generally remaining within a mild and pleasant range of roughly 15 to 30 degrees Celsius. As a result, steel roofs are the norm across most houses. In poorer houses that I used to rent, it was usually two or three sheets of steel, relatively thinner.

During the periods I described, someone would climb onto the roof of my houses often during the middle of the night, probably climbing walls those houses shared with streets, and screech against the steel, throw objects, move items around for hours on the roof which would make noise right above where I would be lying on bed or working. Sometimes there would be noises as if something was spilling from a sack or something in an aggressive way, and at other times there would be noises that you typically hear in a metal workshop, such as things being hammered on steel, although less

severe, and so on. I used to sleep very late, usually well after midnight, and this often happened during that time as well as during the day.

It was unbearable. I raised the issue repeatedly with at least three different landlords and suggested installing CCTV cameras, barbed wire, or roof lighting. In Rwanda, roofs do not have stairs, and from the ground they are often difficult to see clearly due to their incline, particularly in the smaller and poorer houses where I lived. These were usually just one continuous sloped-plane roofs. I think they're called lean-to roofs, except that they were very basic, due to my budgets often being very low. Because those are usually designed to draw the flow of rain water away from the entrance to the back of the structures, the front sides are usually tilted higher, making it difficult to see roofs from the front of houses or rooms.

I was never able to identify anyone during those years, despite how often it occurred. On countless occasions, I rushed outside to check the roof, attempting to catch whoever might have been there, but each time they appeared to have already slipped away, likely descending from the other side into the street. I never even determined exactly how it was being done.

I understand how unbelievable it sounds for something like this to persist over such a long period. Ordinarily, no individual would have the time or energy to carry this out even in a single house, let alone to track someone and repeat it across multiple homes. That is why it seems inconceivable. I may never find an answer to the question of why and just how it went on for so long. It is precisely this anomaly that makes it so troubling.

This did not occur in one house or two, but across multiple houses located in different parts of the city. I would move houses because of a range of such issues, only to encounter exactly the same problems again in the next place. Even some houses that I am not

including experienced this disturbance on a few occasions. I have excluded them only because it was not a persistent pattern in those cases.

Circling back, for example, for approximately three months, I lived in a guesthouse in Rwanda that operated as a bed-and-breakfast. It was a modest place, and I had arranged a longer-term stay. During that period, roughly from June to early September 2019, this roof disturbance would begin every morning at around six and continue until roughly nine, without exception, every day. The noise was loud enough to prevent me from sleeping through it or ignore it, and occurred consistently just before breakfast. I do not know the precise purpose or intent behind it, but the timing itself was prominent. When I called staff members to come and listen, the noise would stop before they arrived. I recorded it on my phone, yet no one took it seriously. Eventually, I had no choice but to leave.

These experiences were spread across nearly five years, with periods of relief in between, totalling to around two years of direct and almost daily exposure to this ordeal several hours every day. When I moved to Kenya for three or four months and lived in an apartment building, the pattern ceased entirely. The same was true when I stayed in a multi-storey house in Rwanda owned by a friend, with staff and security present. During another period of roughly four months, I lived in the back of a shop I had rented for my small business, and none of this occurred there either.

When daily life is disrupted in such a direct and prolonged way, frustration is inevitable, and perhaps that was the entire objective. I was also already coming from a lifetime of abuse in Pakistan, and even without such a background, an average person would struggle with emotions under far lesser pressures. I did develop frustration during

that time particularly, and with the benefit of hindsight, I allow myself some grace for that response.

And this was only one aspect of the several torture-like conditions and themes that defined my time in Africa. There were others. Loud noise such as music coming right next from my room for extended period of time was usually present. This was not regular noise or music, it seemed to be a sustained one and it never resolved anywhere I lived, despite countless involvements of landlords. I have always enjoyed the bustle of everyday life, and the sound of random music. I love music. But this felt different, almost certainly deliberate and targeted.

Also, I depended heavily on electricity because I worked online and, due to limited finances throughout the time, relied on older, inexpensive laptops with very limited battery life. In most of the houses where I lived, there were constant, sometimes weekly, electrical problems. I am not referring to general blackouts, but to issues specific to the houses I occupied. I wouldn't put much emphasis on it if it was limited to just one house.

This pattern intensified sharply during a particular six-month period. I am not exaggerating when I say that I became a regular free customer—it was a free service—of the city's electric company, having to contact them nearly twice a month. Sometimes the electricity meter in my house would malfunction, and when it was not the meter, the wiring would require repair, among other recurring issues that continued to arise. At times the electricity would fluctuate violently throughout the night. One way or another, there were persistent electrical failures.

In addition, my house was broken into while I was inside, again, during night. The intruder made his presence known and then left without stealing anything after I saw him.

There was also state harassment in Rwanda and Uganda, among other incidents, which ultimately forced me to leave even those countries where I had sought exile.

From early 2023 through late July, I could not step outside without encountering officers. Even a walk of ten or twenty meters was enough. For some reason, all of sudden, every trip to a shop or any routine errand brought at least one encounter. This was in an area where, for years, I had barely seen an officer once a year, if that. Stranger still, the pattern did not stop at Rwanda. When I moved to Uganda, another country, to flee the nightmare, it followed me there.

I would prefer to believe that these events were mere coincidences, but they do not appear to be. Seeing it in hindsight and considering similar patterns in nations I went next after Africa, including the UK, whatever has been responsible has reach across continents.

What I experienced in Africa was lighter by comparison to Pakistan. The episodes in that country were far graver, both in the period just before I first left in 2018 and during my brief six-month return in late 2023. Those encounters, in particular, felt genuinely life-threatening.

Sabotage of Every Aspect of Personal Life in the UK

What I experienced in Africa and Pakistan simply cannot occur in countries like the United Kingdom. In law-abiding societies, such extremes do not and cannot take place openly or without consequence. In the UK, anything resembling that scale of abuse would ordinarily result in immediate scandal.

I have nevertheless observed related patterns here. The difference is one of constraint. In the UK, such patterns remain relatively lighter, limited, and bounded by law. Having endured far worse, what I encountered here has been comparatively restrained. These transgressions cannot cross the thresholds they once did in less secure environments.

That does not mean they have been absent. For nearly two years, interference, obstruction, and disruption have been obsessively persistent. I believe some of it could still be classified squarely within inhumane and degrading treatment.

At the same time, it is essential to be clear. British society itself has been defined, in my experience, by immense warmth, politeness, and professionalism. I have immense respect, reverence, and gratitude, for the people I have encountered here and for the beautiful civilization they sustain. That respect is genuine and reflected throughout this book.

If the question arises as to how such treatment could occur in the UK at all, that confusion is shared. The one saving grace, as mentioned earlier, is that this is still the UK. Whatever hostile dynamics exist, they do not appear to have the freedom to impose overt abuse. Any explanation for how exactly this could have been allowed would probably sound implausible, even absurd. I highly suspect that there might be some irrational pretexts at play because it seems officially sanctioned. It seems to extend beyond any one particular city or institution. It is highly plausible that Pakistani Army, from continents far away, despite no reason for this level of sustained hostility except some possible grievance from individuals long-retired, might have offered pretexts and that could have allowed such an ordeal.

The patterns suggest something deeply perverse. Sustained transgressions appear not aimed at resolution, but at provoking a reaction that I suspect could be used to justify institutional persecution with some warped reasoning, just as my refuge and very existence in this safe country remain at stake. Meanwhile, the reality of prolonged crimes, and the harms it has produced for me, appears to be entirely disregarded.

What I endured in Africa, and later elsewhere, I fully believe, can reasonably be described as sustained and targeted crimes. There is no justification for a week of such treatment, let alone years. You cannot turn a person's life into a prison. Even prisons are not meant to be inhumane. I ask the readers to be patient; details will follow soon.

During the writing of this book in particular, the pressure intensified. Disruptions and threats or patterns of sustained and induced unease became more frequent.

ACTIVE SABOTAGE OF ATTEMPTS AT MATERIAL STABILITY

Although I have suffered sabotage in nearly every aspect of my life in the last few years, one struggle has felt like a matter of life and death—my attempt to build a stable life in the United Kingdom. I cannot return to Pakistan for safety reasons, so my success here has meant survival.

The sabotage, harassment, and threats, however, have been persistent.

I could go into detail, but out of respect for the institutions and departments of this country, which I hold in high regard, I will refrain from mentioning them. This omission comes at the expense of my own story.

For most of my first few months here, I hardly went outside at all. I would have done well if I had simply been left alone, but I wasn't.

The constant harassment and inability to move forward were compounded by the fear that I could not return to my home country.

As mentioned, while the harm in Pakistan and Africa was overt, relentless, and destabilising, here, life has been relatively calmer, safer, and far less chaotic, although it has still been unyielding in its own way.

The social exclusion I have experienced has also been constant. Without going into much details, I would leave it at this: from the very beginning since I arrived in the UK, forced social exclusion became an obsessive theme.

Additionally, for almost two years, something shadowy has apparently demonstrated a persistent focus on possibly false character assassination. Given my national background and asylum status, it could have been to frame me for remotely anything, especially sexual accusations, that would ensure my deportation, which meant certain death.

In a world of Epsteins and the long-running failures exposed in UK grooming gang scandals, where serious abuses persisted over decades despite warnings, it is ridiculous to see this force attempting to smear vulnerable individuals with similar accusations. I believe there could reasonably very well be a connection between this force and these scandals.

Its instinct of smearing reflects a recurring tendency: the use of depravity not only as conduct but as a tool of projection. Targeting individuals with smear efforts and fabricated allegations appears to be a consistent tactic. Anyone who speak out against harmful narratives often report being targeted in similar ways.

Without going into the full detail of my own repeated experiences, I will say that it has reached a point where even ordinary everyday behaviour feels constrained. The perseverance and nature

of these tactics have created a constant sense of risk, to the extent that even simple acts, like walking without constant self-consciousness, feel affected. What should be routine daily life has instead been shaped by an ongoing pattern of deprave operations likely aimed at inventing an accusation, making normal engagement increasingly difficult.

The same suffocating pattern appeared in relation to work. I understand that this in itself is normal, not being able to find work. However, sometimes subtle, sometimes very clear and constant experiences of obstruction that I felt in this regard do point to the possibility of something targeted.

After a certain point, taking things that I just mentioned and more into account, withdrawal became the only psychologically sustainable option. If you push harder in such circumstances, you risk appearing relentless, which could be misinterpreted as instability. The natural response, in my case, was simply to step back and protect whatever mental energy remained.

My years in Africa say otherwise about me. Despite the patterns that bordered on torture, I navigated complex social environments, travelled widely across the region, secured visas, extended them when needed, found housing, started tiny businesses, hired and maintained staff, built networks, interacted across cultures, and even lived in slums when needed, all within very limited budget across my five years there. I managed all of it on my own, with confidence. This contrast is profound. This is not a natural decline.

If these struggles were not enough, if having life, dreams, and future stolen were not enough, there was also the constant fear of being sent back to Pakistan. Perhaps that is the plan: to break me emotionally by trapping me between persecution abroad and danger at home.

On top of the patterns discussed above, there have been forms of intimidation or unease that I cannot easily categorise. Although shadowy by design, I will try to articulate some of them in the section below.

Patterns of Intimidation and Unease

Evidentiary status of claims in this section:
Direct personal experience: ●
Pattern-based inference: ●○ *(Yes, but cautious)*
External corroboration: ○

Patterns outlined here must be understood as subjective conclusions, not necessarily as proof of coordinated intent. What makes the individual incidents that follow significant is their occurrence against an ongoing background of persecution, harassment, constant threats, and interference in my life.

PATTERN 1

I will begin with an incident from a few months ago. At the time, I was writing this book. I went to a local shop to buy groceries. I ended up visiting the shop twice because I had forgotten my wallet. Near the entrance stood a Middle Eastern man, speaking on his phone.

During the entirety of time I was inside, my rushing back to home and then back to the shop, and until the time I left shop for good, he remained positioned near the entrance door. As I moved around the shop, he repeatedly shifted his position near the front door with glass, watching as I entered and exited.

Two other Middle-Eastern men entered the shop soon. They followed me throughout the shop. At one point, as mentioned, after I had briefly left to retrieve my wallet, one of them took one of the

items I had left near the counter, a loaf of bread, and moved it to the back of the shop with him, as both waited there.

One of these men carried a hard case that immediately caught my attention. It strongly resembled a pistol case. I had seen those in Pakistan as my brother had one in our home. I took the loaf of bread again and went back to the counter to pay, and they followed me there, one reaching before me through another aisle, another behind me. As I was paying, the individual carrying the case made a point of flaunting it around and briefly opened it. Apparently, it was empty. Nothing happened. The same individual with the case greeted me at the end. As it all unfolded, the third man remained outside, watching through the glass of the door.

What made the encounter unsettling was not just the incident in isolation, but also its context. I live in an area where encounters like this are extremely rare. It is one of the safest places I have lived in the UK, and I consider myself fortunate to be here. In nearly a year at this location, this was probably the only time I encountered anyone who looked suspicious, let alone three of them at the same time, and let alone one of them flaunting a brief case that resembled a firearm case. Also, Middle Eastern individuals are uncommon here. I might have come across probably just two or three during my entire stay of almost a year in this street. So, them being there with such behaviour on top was uncommon. I do have a Middle Eastern friend and I have a lot of respect for them.

On its own, this incident would probably not have meant too much. However, occurring against a background of near-daily intimidation during that period, and more broadly throughout my time in the UK, it felt more than random.

PATTERN 2

Another pattern, present throughout much of 2025 and what continues today, involves repeated encounters with individuals of Pakistani origins that takes the form of what appears to be open stalking.

For one example, during the middle of 2025, I followed a regular route every other day for brisk walking. In the beginning, it was not too unusual. Soon after, a consistent pattern emerged. Almost every time, vehicles, particularly taxis driven by Pakistani individuals, would appear along that route in ways that drew my attention to themselves. Sometimes they would be parked in the middle of the road, stopped, or positioned perpendicular to the roads at middle of the junctions, blocking the entire (sometimes empty) road. As I approached, they would drive ahead of me in direction of my journey, only to reappear again moments later at another junction. These kinds of patterns repeated as long as I continued using that route.

I eventually abandoned that route and moved my walks to a park. Shortly thereafter, as the process of writing this book intensified, I largely stopped going out altogether. Circumstances deteriorated to the point where even remaining in my room did not always feel sufficient to avoid further disturbances.

The stalking patterns were especially pronounced in Bradford, where the intensity of these encounters was markedly higher than elsewhere.

LOW-WEIGHT PATTERN 1

Another pattern, albeit something I put little weight to involved repeated near misses with buses. Since 2024, I can count three particularly close incidents. This is notable because when I go out, I am exceptionally cautious. Years of prior abusive dynamics have made me vigilant by necessity.

These near misses felt unsettling. They tended to arise in precise alignment with my walking habits.

In mid-2025, one (now making three in total) of Jeffrey Epstein's victims died after a bus collision. Her car was involved in what was reported to be a non-serious accident. However, she nonetheless developed serious injuries regardless and soon after died of suicide[169], despite having previously explicitly stated she wasn't suicidal. This entire incident seems to be a bizarre saga. It cast earlier incidents I had already noticed and felt uneasy about months ago into a darker light.

It would be incorrect to suggest that I do not make mistakes while walking. I do, like anyone else. I routinely attribute many ordinary such incidents to my own error. That is part of modern urban living. I have never been in a serious or noteworthy accident though.

What caused me to pause were these particular incidents, all involving buses. In these cases, vehicles approached silently and unexpectedly, creeping close enough that I avoided accident only by unconsciously and miraculously stepping aside, in all incidents in question, by a matter of seconds. While I'm very cautious with recounting such things, what I can say with confidence is that these incidents were unusual, and it was not something I had encountered before.

While I cannot draw firm conclusions from these incidents alone, their accumulation produced a sense of unease rather than isolated concern. From the perspective of someone with prior exposure to strange dynamics, and given that this touches on personal safety, it

---

[169] Christal Hayes, "Virginia Giuffre, Prince Andrew and Jeffrey Epstein Accuser, Dies by Suicide," *BBC News,* April 26, 2025, https://www.bbc.co.uk/news/articles/cql67qk0dd3o.

seemed prudent to mention them publicly on a better-safe-than-sorry basis.

I do not wish to emphasize these incidents in this book. I would prefer to regard them as coincidences as they most likely were. They are included solely out of caution, in the unlikely event that such an assumption proves incorrect.

Inhumane and Degrading Treatment

Throughout my time in Africa and in the years since, there has usually been, in one form or another, some element of externally-induced unease. In Africa especially, as described earlier, one of the consistent themes was severe and persistent noise disturbance. This very pattern, although less severe, has been a theme in the UK too.

This usually involves extremely loud noise lasting for hours. Also, sometimes very specific disturbances, tailored to my vulnerabilities, recur too.

This is not some open-Guantanamo. This is the UK, not an open prison. I cannot speak to what used to occur in such facilities, but the prolonged nature of what I have been subjected to meets recognized thresholds for inhumane treatment.

The unfortunate aspect of such tormenting ordeals is that they can easily be dismissed as trivial or routine. The absence of witnesses or validation is such circumstances is itself deeply damaging.

This experience fits within multiple well-established frameworks in trauma and abuse psychology. This has not been a minor or moderate form of the phenomena that is listed below. It has been a severe and sustained one.

Chronic psychological abuse and coercive control, defined by repeated behaviours over time intended to destabilise, exhaust, or entrap.

Psychological maltreatment, a term used in trauma literature to describe sustained exposure to conditions that undermine psychological integrity.

Environmental harassment, recognised in trauma and human-rights contexts as repeated disturbances, loss of safe private space, and interference with rest, routine, or habitation, even where a single perpetrator or explicit intent cannot be proven.

Sleep deprivation as psychological abuse, explicitly recognised in trauma psychology and human-rights frameworks. When prolonged, it is considered inhumane treatment regardless of who caused it.

Cumulative or complex trauma exposure refers to repeated small, big, or medium stressors over long periods with no recovery window.

Readers are encouraged to search these terms; I found their descriptions online to fit neatly with my situation which goes well beyond just the noise disturbance. Some of these are deemed criminal offenses in many places of the world.

Finally, I hope and I fully believe that these experiences, along with other forms of human-rights and personally-centred abuses, torment, and constant social or personal interferences that I continue to endure, will ultimately become public. I fully believe that this part of the testimony will one day be corroborated. Whether through shifts in decision-makers, power, or the exposure of those enabling this abuse within the UK, abuses of this scale tend to do surface eventually.

This book already places part of that truth in the public domain and sets the stage for further transparency about this long, criminal, and inhumane episode. It may take years or even decades, but such actions do not always remain hidden in countries like the UK. I would advise those responsible for something that has long crossed the

threshold of sustained personal or human rights crimes to consider that possibility.

I am a forgiving person, and I may still forgive and move on. But continued abuse, threats, interferences, and inhumane or degrading treatment, particularly within the UK, would be deeply unwise. Further harm, especially beyond certain thresholds, risks bringing the full record of what I have been subjected to for years into the open.

There is a reason these things do not occur this openly and blatantly in countries like the UK.

Sabotage of Refuge

This section is a bit long, but it is essential. Please bear with it. Also note that the use of third person is intentional, and its purpose will become clear by the end.

Imagine sitting in your room, waiting, convinced that this time your most basic legal rights will be honoured, that a life-and-death situation will at last begin to resolve. For more than a year, you have been denied those rights by the Home Office and the HMCTS (His Majesty's Courts and Tribunals Service). Now, having asked a judge to examine it, it feels impossible that justice will not finally be served.

Let's pause here for a moment, and come back to this a little later. First, let's trace how you arrived here.

THE HOME OFFICE

You have a mountain of evidence in a legal setting that barely requires it. Yours is an exceptionally strong case, one that should almost instantly be recognised as warranting refuge. In asylum law, because of the life-and-death stakes and the cross-border nature of persecution, the burden of proof is deliberately lenient. Many applicants with little or no evidence are granted protection after interview. You, however, have an abundance of it.

And yet, despite this, you have been met with unfriendliness and systematic evasion of the very evidence the authorities are legally obliged to consider and engage with. It does not stop there. From the very first interview, and again in the substantial second interview, your responses are erroneously recorded. Statements you never made appear in the transcripts. When, in the second interview, you explain that key parts of the first interview were incorrectly recorded by the interviewer, that clarification is itself distorted. The resulting transcript says that you provided inaccurate information at the screening interview, a complete inversion of what you actually said, and provably false by their own interview recording.

This second interview goes further still. Additional statements are attributed to you that you clearly never made. Fortunately, you have the right to request the interview recording, which you did after receiving the heartbreaking refusal of your asylum application in March 2025. The recording makes it unmistakably clear that these statements were incorrectly misattributed to you. For one example, the interviewing officer repeated one of your statements correctly at the time, yet recorded something entirely different in the transcript. The version entered not only downplays the seriousness of the issue, but renders it almost silly, weakening the gravity of part of your case.

On top of that, you explicitly referenced central pieces of evidence during the interview, which the interviewer was not willing to talk about at all. That evidence was also entirely disregarded in the refusal. Instead, the refusal letter focused on a list of irrelevant trivialities, matters with little to no bearing on the substance of the case. Even those were interpreted and misinterpreted through a lens highly illogical.

What you had until then assumed would be a straightforward grant of refuge was refused on grounds that were either deliberately intentional or plainly incompetent.

Yes, every aspect of your life in the UK had been sabotaged. All the persecution remains in your mind, yet you always believed that in a country like the UK, there might be covert hostility, subtle obstruction, perhaps even quiet attempts at harm, but nothing this illogical could arise in an application containing evidence that leaves no room for it. After all, this was the UK, not some lawless country. That belief, over the course of next few months, almost reaching a full year in total, was about to turn out to be wrong.

So, despite everything you have lived through, you still tell yourself it must be a bureaucratic nightmare. Just an incompetent caseworker. Just the overburdened Home Office dealing with too many cases.

Thankfully, you still have the right to appeal, and with it, a renewed sense of hope comes back. The next stage requires the submission of an Appeal Skeleton Argument (ASA), a document setting out precisely why you dispute the Home Office's decision.

You try to find a lawyer under legal aid. You find none. Everyone tells you they are full. You then turn to free legal hotlines for guidance. Your calls drop repeatedly. Sometimes after hours of waiting. Sometimes after only minutes or even seconds. On the rare occasion you reach an operator, they suddenly cannot hear you after formal greetings. With the exception of one additional instance, which I will describe shortly, this does not occur in any other context. Eventually, you give up and decide to represent yourself and prepare the bundle on your own.

And you do a good job of it. When you have been persecuted and abused throughout your life, not only by family but by state

institutions, and when you had previously sought asylum in two countries in Africa as well, only to have your applications not even registered both times despite the universal right to submit one (which was another outright denial of your rights), you inevitably accumulate a vast body of evidence. Each piece testifies to sustained persecution or life-threatening dynamics spread over many years.

It is another thing that the Home Office has not even acknowledged that any of this evidence exists, beyond including it in a nominal list of "materials considered," which it is obliged to provide. Not a single indication suggests, however, that they have seen or actually considered it in reality, despite it having been submitted and explicitly emphasised. But surely, you tell yourself, this is exactly what the appeal process is for. At the very least, your evidence will finally be considered. The UK's legal system is supposed to protect your most basic legal rights.

And then there is the Home Office's misconduct at worst and sustained incompetence at best, the clear misattribution of your statements, and everything that followed from it.

You assemble a formidable appeal. A fortress of a case, supported by more than sixty evidence files. The case is so clear and thoroughly supported that it leaves little room for mistreatment of any kind.

The next step is the Home Office's review of your appeal argument and, with it, a review of their own refusal. At this stage, they have a choice. They can withdraw their decision and approve your application, or they can continue to oppose it if they believe they are justified in doing so. Either way, they are obliged to give a reasoned response to your arguments and to consider your evidence. Whether they agree or disagree is a separate matter. They can reject it if they wish. But they must engage with it.

Guess what the Home Office does instead. Rather than addressing the substance, it asks the HMCTS to require you to rewrite your appeal argument, citing supposed legal formatting requirements that do not apply to an unrepresented appellant like you. The aim is obvious: to force further brevity so they can avoid confronting your arguments. And did I mention that without a lawyer, you are not even required to meet those standards.

And yet, instead of enforcing standard practice, the HMCTS instructs you to comply with the Home Office's request. You are given just four days to rewrite the appeal argument bundle, despite having no legal training and having been unable to secure representation.

Still, you manage it. Within four days, you complete the revised argument undiminished and submit it. It is even better than the previous one. You remain hopeful. Surely now, once they finally engage with your arguments and evidence, there will be no room left for obstruction.

Guess what happens next. Do they finally address your evidence? Do they engage with your arguments, even in part? No. Instead, they seize upon the most formality-driven tiny section of your bundle, a procedural point that barely touches the substance of your case, and respond to it with an almost comical level of obsession and energy. It appears to be a way of fulfilling the bare minimum of producing a review letter or forcing the appeal hearing on a mischaracterised structure with focus dragged as far away as possible from the actual case, and paving way for a twisted appeal outcome.

In their review, they completely ignore all of your evidence and accompanying arguments, the schedule of issues, and every instance of misattribution you raised against the Home Office pointing to their own recording with time stamps for evidence.

It is as if none of it exists for them.

They simply repeat one or two statements from the original refusal letter despite those arguments having been thoroughly dismantled by multiple pieces of evidence. Yet the Home Office shuts its eyes to all of it.

THE HMCTS

The Home Office is required to engage with the evidence and core arguments in its initial refusal letter. If it has failed to do so at that stage, it is obliged to correct that failure during its review. It has now failed at both.

By this point, it becomes increasingly clear that even your application for asylum may be being mishandled or obstructed, whether intentionally or unintentionally. You again take the only course of action that makes sense. You ask the HMCTS to do what it exists to do, to perform its most basic function, and to direct the Home Office to do the bare minimum required by law.

Months pass. What should have been a response within five working days finally arrives. The HMCTS tells you it cannot ask the Home Office to conduct a further review of additional evidence, and that it will nonetheless notify the Home Office should it wish to respond. Yet your concern was never a further review. It was that the first review be conducted lawfully.

That so-called "additional evidence," the evidence you have been pleading to have addressed is the same existing evidence that you submitted with your appeal argument and something that has remained eerily untouched, despite constant reminders, submissions, and appeals to basic legality. It is crystal clear from every angle that you were referring to evidence already available to the Home Office at the time of its review, which it was obliged to engage with. This particular framing was achieved by closing eyes to your actual

requests, as well as the titles of those requests themselves, and instead going out of way and isolating words or sentences out of context.

As expected, the Home Office does not respond.

You had hoped that the same HMCTS that forced you to rewrite your appeal argument at the Home Office's request, something you were neither expected nor legally obliged to do, will eventually ensure that Home Office finally does what it is actually obliged to do. It does not.

Both the Home Office and the appeal processes are bound by law to consider evidence and engage with arguments. What kind of legal system, anywhere in the world, refuses to even discuss evidence? Imagine a victim of a crime standing before a judge who is willing to talk about everything else, the weather, personal trivia, procedural distractions, but recoils from the actual arguments and evidence itself, and this saga goes on for about a year.

Law depends on evidence. Everywhere. This is the most basic principle of justice. A process that refuses to entertain evidence is not a legal process at all. Under their own Practice Direction, both the Home Office and the Tribunal are explicitly required to consider and engage with it. There are precedent cases in which higher judges have criticised both judges and Home Office decision makers for failing to engage with some pieces of central arguments and core evidence. In your case, the issue is not one document or one argument. It is the entirety of your evidence and accompanying arguments. You cited those precedents directly in your request to the HMCTS.

Nonetheless, the HMCTS mischaracterises your request as a request for a further review and omits the substance of your concerns altogether. It selectively extracts one or two words out of context, disregarding the surrounding text, the overall request, and the serious

procedural fairness issue you raised, which lies at the heart of your request.

You still have one option left. A judge can review the decision made by the HMCTS legal officers, and that is exactly what you pursue. Within the very first three sentences of your request, you make it explicit that you are not asking for a further review, only for the first one to be carried out lawfully: that the evidence be considered at least, as this is a binding legal requirement. You ask for the tribunal's own practice directions to be followed; you cite those specific paragraphs from the directions.

You also cite the Tribunal's efficiency mandate. Matters that could be resolved in less than an hour, with a single review of the evidence and arguments already submitted, have instead been dragged out for months. Such conduct directly contradicts the very mandate they are supposed to follow. The efficiency principle exists to conserve the time and resources of both the Tribunal and the Home Office, not to waste public resources.

You also point to the Home Office's actions in misattributing your statements. Not only does it remain uncorrected, it is carried forward and relied upon with confidence in the review, as if it were established fact.

You lay all of this before the judge, making clear that this total breakdown of the due process violates your legal rights, undermines equality of arms, and denies you a fair hearing.

This is further compounded by the possibility of CPTSD, along with your difficulties such as zoning out, processing spoken English, and communicating without prior preparation or written support, all while having no legal representation, disadvantages recognised within the legal process even under fair and transparent conditions, rather than the complete lack of clarity you face in your case.

And so the story returns to where it began.

Here you are again. Sitting in your room. Waiting. Certain that this time, at last, your basic legal rights will be honoured and that a life-and-death situation will finally begin to resolve. It is no longer the Home Office. It is no longer the HMCTS. A judge will now decide the matter on the basis of very elementary legal rights.

You will finally be heard.

You will finally be served with the most basic right of all: to have your evidence and schedule of issues in you appeal argument considered and engaged with at least.

You are certain the judge will correct this. It was due for a long time.

THE TRIBUNAL JUDGE

Guess what happens. The judge too mischaracterises your request into something you never sought in substance and rejects it. He adopts the same framing used by the HMCTS legal officer, despite the fact that you explicitly stated in the very first paragraph of your request that you were not asking for that (the matter has always concerned engagement with the evidence at least once in this entire process), claiming that you had requested a "further" review, alongside the consideration of "additional evidence," something they are not obliged to consider. On that basis, your request is refused.

You can almost understand the necessity of the mischaracterisations. Had your requests been addressed as written, there would have been no lawful basis to refuse them. The tribunal's own Practice Direction requires the opposite. You even reminded them explicitly, citing paragraph 7.11. So, naturally, just as with every other stage of your asylum application, the attempt to correct the injustice is handled in the same way.

Your clear legal request, grounded in Practice Directions and supported by precedent case law is completely ignored. Instead, what you never asked for is invented via wordings taken out of context, and used as the justification for refusal.

This is despite your correction and a further reminder that a decision-maker cannot lawfully repeat the same errors once they have been expressly corrected. To do so constitutes procedural impropriety and an abuse of process. Yet they persist, wholesale ignoring your corrections and reminders, continuing to reject your requests by relying on the very errors you continue to identify and correct, as if they're not even reading it.

The judge eventually responds again. This time, his words carry irritation, calling those requests as "complaining." He once again ignores the substance of your request, continues the misinterpretation, and informs you that he will not accept your requests.

You do not mind annoyance. What troubles you is what it reveals. When a judge within a system designed to protect life in a refuge case behaves this way, the realization is far more disturbing. It is the realization of hopelessness in a life-and-death situation. You possess multiples pieces of evidence that are each all alone considered decisive in cases like this. Yet every institution and every avenue meant to hear it refuses to look at it and engage with it.

As far as they are concerned, none of your evidence exists. What exists instead are trivialities and distortions, details twisted repeatedly from what you actually said. Your repeated clarifications of incorrect framings arising from sentences taken out of context have since been completely ignored, with the grounds continually shifting. When one framing is corrected, it is disregarded and ignored in the next decision and attention shifts to some other procedural distraction. However,

one thing remains constant: the substance of your requests, as well as the compounding material errors and due process concerns, are consistently ignored. The denial of fair trial persists.

For them, reality consists only of the mischaracterisations they themselves have constructed. And they remain unmoved by the fact that the proof of those actions is documented, consistent, live, and traceable across more than a year of written and verbal correspondence: interview recording, written submissions, and legal requests submitted through their own portals. Everything is verifiable. Everything is on record on their very own system. As much as you wish otherwise, this is not speculation or exaggeration. It is real.

So here you are. More than a year has passed, and despite constant pleading throughout that time, you have never been granted the most basic right of all: to have your evidence considered. Since March 2025 to April 2026 (as of the date of this update), HMCTS legal officers and tribunal judges have actively shielded the Home Office from fulfilling its legal responsibilities.

In summary, your central evidence, in fact virtually all of your evidence, along with the accompanying arguments and your concerns about their complete evasion, have been ignored at every stage of your asylum process. This includes two interviews, the refusal letter, the Home Office's review, numerous requests to HMCTS (likely exceeding 10–20 in total), and a judge's review, spanning more than a year and a half. Instead, decisions have consistently focused on peripheral matters and distortions, with the substance of your requests and statements entirely disregarded.

The Home Office's near total evasion of your evidence, accompanying arguments, and schedule of issues has prevented you from properly clarifying and developing your case, and therefore

from meaningfully participating in the process. Such engagement is a fundamental element of due process, as it enables an appellant to understand the case against them and respond effectively. The Home Office has also sought to divert attention from the substance of your arguments and evidence by placing a disproportionate focus on peripheral issues, making the case unrecognisable with trivialities, and rendering the entire process effectively impossible for an unrepresented appellant.

Engagement is fatal to their position. The more evidence they consider (not that they have engaged with virtually any of your evidence as of yet) and the more issues in your appeal argument they are forced to address, the less defensible their stance becomes. Full engagement would destroy it entirely. Unlawful, total evasion was the only way to maintain opposition, and that is exactly what they have done.

THE HMCTS SERVICE

It doesn't just stop at the application itself. The same happened with logistics of the appeal services itself. Since March 2025, every step of the tribunal process felt riddled with obstacles. What is stated as "within 5 business days" for responses to your legal requests often extended into delays of several months. A deadline request, even when supported by medical evidence and submitted well within the stipulated timeframe, went unanswered altogether.

When contact was made by phone, operators acknowledged that the request fell within the stipulated timeframe, yet stated that they were unable to escalate the matter. The result was uncertainty, with no clear acceptance or refusal of the request, leaving you unsure of your position as the deadline arrived and passed. You did however, having no other choice, meet the deadline.

This pattern appeared to extend across service support more broadly. For example, when contacting the HMCTS helpline, calls, sometimes nine within a single day, were consistently cut off. When you did reach the operators, they pretended not to hear you. Your phone never had any issues with any calls whatsoever unless it was specifically about legal hotlines or HMCTS.

Then came the fee remission saga. Since you believed that asylum seekers were generally not allowed to work, you didn't seek work after applying for asylum, and fee remission was your only chance to appeal. You submitted everything properly, but it was rejected. The rejection email asked you to do something on their portal; a function that does not even exist. After that, they stopped replying to you completely. For the next six months, there was not one reply from the HMCTS fee departments you contacted, not even from the escalation team. You chased them constantly, and only after half a year did they finally approve the remission.

It felt weird because escalation departments in most organisations usually respond within a reasonable time. That is literally their function. This entire saga could be dismissed as bureaucratic delay, but in the context of obstruction at every stage, it felt like something else. For months, you lived under a quiet but constant fear that your right to appeal might be taken away on technical grounds related to fee remission.

Furthermore, due to sensitive information concerning your mother contained in your statements, you explicitly requested an all-female panel, a request they were required to consider. All-male or all-female appeal panels and interviewers are a standard feature of both processes, and applicants are explicitly asked in advance whether they require such an arrangement before each stage. For you, however, on both occasions, the request was denied. This materially

affects your ability to speak freely on a sensitive matter and present your case fully. While less egregious than the legal violations discussed earlier, it nevertheless constitutes a further denial of procedural fairness.

And then there is the human cost. To recognize that, if this process continues with this level of obstruction and obstacles at literally every single step of the way, it means someone with ill intentions might be influencing this process. It is a deeply concerning reality. To live through that awareness, day after day, is harrowing. In a normal asylum process, a person worries about their case being accepted or refused; in yours, you worry about that and about the system itself being undermined around you. It is the feeling of watching hope slowly fade, especially when the stakes are as high as your very life. You have probably heard of people in similar situations collapsing from the strain, suffering strokes, or falling unconscious under the weight of it all. There have been moments when you came frighteningly close to that yourself.

A BRIEF NOTE

For now, let this be treated as a hypothetical scenario. Every word of what you have just read could describe an ordeal I have been living through, or it could not. I do have an ongoing asylum application, with an appeal hearing scheduled in the coming months, and for that reason, legal reasons, I cannot disclose details. I therefore ask the reader to understand this section as hypothetical for the time being.

It could be about anyone. It could be about no one in particular. It could even be about an alien living in a world much like our own. Or it could be about me. I will not say that it is, and I will not say that it is not.

What I can say is this. Once the process is complete, and if this account is indeed mine, then every single word of it is true. If that's

the case, then please note that these are live correspondences and verifiable proofs. All of this will be made public. Everything I have stated will be corroborated, and evidence published within days once the appeal process is over.

A Life at Stake

If my genuine asylum application is rejected unjustly and I am forced to return to Pakistan, it would amount to a death sentence. I could not set foot in that country alive of my own will. That outcome would, of course, be convenient for those who wish me harm, because while they cannot directly inflict harm here in the UK and get away with it, forcing my return would achieve the same result under the guise of procedure.

PROXIES AND INTERMEDIARIES

As discussed before, I think whatever or whoever could be undermining my life, it could have used my past history with the Pakistani Army as a convenient pretext and smokescreen for its own operations.

The Pakistani Army and its intelligence agency appear to continue to demonstrate an illogical hostility toward me, especially after my arrival in the UK, especially after I "spoke" things that don't align well with global narratives that don't even concern Pakistan.

I believe normal people, even when given evidence, cannot believe or comprehend the absurd lengths and intensity with which something shadowy increasingly seems to operate. Even dystopian fiction seems to fall short of capturing the level of degeneration, the scale of transgressions, and the persistence of its apparent obsession. We are familiar with its methods in politics, where leaders at least have some capacity to withstand and guard against it; for ordinary and vulnerable individuals, however, the impact is far more severe.

As far as the Pakistani Army is concerned, this is outside rational understanding, defies basic logic, and even contradicts the Pakistani Army's own precedent, if they are indeed involved. They have direct critics who openly expose their actions every day, saying far more and far worse about them than I ever have in my entire life. There are hundreds of such voices, both abroad and within Pakistan. There are also persecuted political and social groups in Pakistan who have spoken against the Army openly for years.

Even very severe critics of the Pakistani Army have always found refuge, safety, and a regular respectful life in the UK for eighty years of Pakistan's history without UK's institutions themselves turning intensely hostile.

I have never been a critic of the Pakistani Army. This book is the first time I have talked about them like this other than two or three social media comments I made in late 2024 after their unceasing hostility.

What makes this even more irrational is that I spent months offering every olive branch I could think of to the Pakistani Army. I wrote more than thirty emails to Army contacts in late 2024, and not a single one received a response. In those emails, I went as far as saying that I would not even discuss my brother's abuses, my own family matter, let alone speak about the Pakistani Army, which I repeatedly stated I respected. I even pointed out that my letter to the UK police had omitted my brother's connection to the Army out of respect for their institution. In the same email I explained my concerns about my brother and the abuses within my family, hoping they would understand and let me be. Yet, for reasons that would defy even the most rudimentary logic—reasons or justifications I still do not know—I appear to be treated as if I were their adversary or if I disliked them, which I certainly don't.

Additionally, even in this book, I have omitted some of the most malicious things my brother did, acts far worse than anything else I have described here. I have also completely refrained from discussing the current Pakistani government or current Army officials. I remain fully willing to unconditionally omit any parts of this book if the Army requests it. All it needs to do is ask. This book is not about them. Also, they can tell me if they didn't like something I said or did in the past so that I can avoid doing it in the future.

If warped pretexts are at play, and if the Pakistani Army or its intelligence services are, for whatever reason, being invoked within them, then the pretext collapses immediately under a single offer: I will not speak about them at all, permanently, if they convey what bothers them. I'm actually inclined to talk in their favour, just as I have done all my life. If they were simply to state what their issue with me is, any alleged grievance would be resolved at once.

I do not believe this persecution is the work of the Pakistani Army or its intelligence agency, the ISI. They neither possess the reach nor the capacity to orchestrate sustained harassment and destabilisation inside the UK. They could not wield influence within institutions and legal systems of the UK designed explicitly to safeguard individuals from those very patterns.

Additionally, there is no plausible scenario in which a foreign South Asian military pointlessly expends sustained resources to harass a private individual who has extended every olive branch, and has never been outspoken about it, at the cost of its public image, diplomatic consequences, and so on. The possibility collapses further when one considers jurisdiction. A foreign force cannot operate persistently within UK borders so openly, evade scrutiny and law enforcement, have sustained crimes and transgressions committed, stalk an individual, and carry out an obsessive sabotage of almost

every aspect of his life, despite repeated police reports, unless it is being actively enabled.

Based on everything I have experienced so far, it is possible that the Pakistani Army could simply be a convenient intermediary proxy. And this would not be surprising, because this pattern seems to be a signature tactic of the apparatus that I have described throughout this book.

Do I really expect to plainly state things that I always do and face no consequences at all in this circus? Talking plainly about malicious sabotage against Western nations and exposing unnatural narratives without hedging was inevitably going to provoke resistance. Whether pretext came from the Pakistani Army, the Chileans, Zambians, Koreans, any military or intelligence service, or whether it came from aliens from another star system, zebras, giraffes, or the UK institutions outright, consequences were unavoidable. An individual who refuses to soften his opinions does not pass unnoticed in the circus that we have today.

So, will the irrational hostilities stop? Probably not. Does it expose the unnaturalness of the possible proxies? Probably.

And did I mention I continue to have absolutely zero idea what the alleged problem is. After years of sustained and irrational hostility in different environments, I remain entirely unaware of any official issue, charge, or stated pretext. I have absolutely zero knowledge of any formal complaint, violation, or boundary I am supposed to have crossed, whether in Rwanda, Uganda, Pakistan, or the UK.

People throughout the world have every right to live and relish life and do ordinary things. We do not need a psychopath force scheming domination, ruining happy life of other people, and causing destruction wherever it operates. Nobody is obsessed with narratives and the resultant crime as this force is. People seem to suffer for

unknowingly getting into its attention just for being themselves. Nobody asked for this, and we do not want it operating like this.

LIFE-AND-DEATH STAKES

If I were forced to leave any Western country governed by genuine rule of law for even a marginally less safe environment, let alone Pakistan, I believe my life would be in serious danger. Given the scale of sabotage I have already endured within a country as law-abiding as the United Kingdom, it is difficult to imagine what would happen elsewhere.

With this book now in the public domain, I fear that ill-intentions are bound to arise.

Citizens of Western nations can somewhat take freedom of expression and legal protection for granted. I cannot. For those who wish me harm, there is an obvious vulnerability: relocating me to a less secure environment. I do not possess a strong passport or automatic access to safety. What I have is a fragile refuge in a safe country, and even that appears intolerable to someone.

I will restate this. Given the apparent reach, intent, and influence involved, I would be acutely vulnerable anywhere that is not genuinely Western, genuinely law-abiding, and unwilling to tolerate persecution beyond a certain threshold. It seems as if my presence in a genuinely safe country **specifically** is the cause of irritation. In weaker states, or in systems with porous safeguards, these tactics would be deployed without restraint. Even parts of Europe would not be safe for me.

In safe, law-abiding countries such as the UK, this situation has natural limits. It can continue for a period, but it cannot be maintained forever. I am already experiencing a reduction in severity compared to the past, as I continue articulating it publicly. In environments governed by real safeguards, stability eventually returns.

The removal of a genuine refugee with a strong application of asylum from a country like the UK should be impossible, especially with all its legal oversight mechanisms. If that impossibility were somehow achieved, and justice system itself undermined, my chances of reaching safety again from an unsafe location would effectively vanish. Keeping me trapped or harming me there would be exponentially easier than this ongoing attempt in the UK. I would not be left alone. Too many variables would turn any stay elsewhere into a permanent and immediate danger, subtle or overt, highly likely resulting in my death. No assurances or guarantees would be sufficient.

This entity seems expert in creating warped "situations," and schemes that tend to go well beyond extreme, unthinkable, and unprecedented, if it is fixated on someone. My presence in a slightly less safe country will put me in an extreme danger because it is unlikely to relent and may resort to unpredictable tactics.

Throughout this book, I have called for mutual understanding and constructive paths forward, yet this entity has responded only with escalation and hostility. It does not want constructive solutions. It is used to murders, atrocities, and crime partly because those have worked for it.

One aspect I have not fully explored in this book is the level of disruption I believe has already been caused. Based on my experience, the behaviour of "patterns" has been volatile and disproportionate, marked by reactions rarely seen in stable systems. If this can occur within the UK, the implications elsewhere are bleak.

Even without considering my history of persecution elsewhere, this ongoing persecution alone warrants protection and refuge to a degree that easily far exceeds that of a typical asylum or protection claim. In a normal situation with an honest and properly functioning

decision-making chain, the sustained nature, severity, and patterns of current harm within the UK itself, let alone past persecution, would be enough to establish clear vulnerability, prompting not only recognition but active protective intervention and a recommendation for refuge, rather than dismissal, delay, and active denial of fair process.

Even if, by some unlikely stroke of fortune, I were to remain physically unharmed and alive for months or even years in a less safe country, the cost would still be devastating. Time would be lost. Life would be paralysed by fear, instability, and renewed sabotage. The effort required to reach safety again would erase all progress. At best, it would mean returning years later to the same point I am at now, after enduring chaos for nothing. At worst, and almost certainly, I would never be able to get out of there alive.

I have lived this reality before. Since 2018, time spent in unsafe countries brought only further persecution, deeper instability, and tighter entrapment. And that was before I wrote this book.

I will again restate with immense emphasis: if I am harmed, made vulnerable by unlawful displacement, or if my death occurs, this force that I have discussed throughout this book, will be 100% responsible. Not 99.5%, but 100%, and not the proxies, no matter how much effort might be employed for justifications. No matter how elaborate the pretexts, this book and my long-held outspoken views would remain the true cause, and this entity the sole culprit and perpetrator.

I absolutely do not believe that it is degrading working and functioning systems for no reasons; silencing me forever is the objective. Based on the broader patterns I have observed, individuals who say things directly like me tend to end up in "accidents," persecuted, and end up dying through one mysterious cause or another within years. I do not say this lightly: I believe my life is in

serious danger, and I can only remain safe if I am protected, which will not be possible outside a safe country like the UK.

The Possible Partial Surrender and Compromise of Institutional Autonomy

The situation I am facing appears to present two possibilities: either an external proxy is effectively "making" someone within the UK order the persecution, which would be highly unusual in the UK context, or an individual is deliberately engaging in such conduct in a personal capacity without relying on proxy justification. Either scenario is serious, with the former bordering on multiple treason-adjacent elements that go beyond ordinary dysfunction or corruption.

It is highly plausible that, under the guise of pretexts and proxy arrangements, elements of institutional independence, sovereignty, and autonomy within the UK have been surrendered or compromised. The state's decision-making capacity appears, in this situation, to have been allowed to be deliberately influenced, with systems and processes effectively inverted, and situations made to happen that align with the will of a foreign South Asian proxy. Mechanisms that are designed to function and operate independently may have been made to submit, bend, or comply with the direction of a foreign military actor operating from abroad.

This is not a reference to ordinary irregularities, but rather to a prolonged period of abuse, criminal conduct, degradation, inhumane treatment, torture, and sustained institutional hostility, all taking place within UK borders apparently allowed willingly by an influential decision maker.

In that context, this situation suggests that the UK, one of the most powerful nations in the world, may have, likely for the first time

in its history, for an extended period, effectively yielded to unlawful commands of a South Asian military.

Possible justifications such as "they made us do it," "there were threats," or "it was done for the greater good" would not constitute acceptable excuses for such conduct. Rather, they would amount to attempts to rationalise serious breaches of foundational principles.

The rule of law is not negotiable. Core legal protections and institutional independence are fundamental and are not meant to be traded away for perceived political considerations. Sovereignty cannot be partially or covertly suspended. Where unlawful actions have occurred, particularly where an individual has suffered repeated harm and due process has been consistently bypassed, such conduct would remain inherently unlawful. Accountability, in this situation, would not be avoidable.

In this context, the conduct could reasonably be described as "treason-adjacent," in the sense that the individual or individuals entrusted with state authority would be using that authority to undermine the nation's lawful, functioning, independent, and autonomous systems. This would mean they would be weakening institutional integrity, potentially causing national security breaches, and compromising the state's decision-making capacity.

Furthermore, the involvement of a foreign military directing a sovereign nation's legal or institutional processes toward compromised, procedurally flawed, extra-judicial, or unlawful outcomes would represent a form of institutional aggression originating at a higher level. Any individual facilitating such actions would, in effect, be a collaborator with a foreign power.

The implications of actions discussed in paragraphs above would include:

1. Severe breach of rule

Those enabling such conduct would, in effect, be contributing to the erosion of institutional independence. Even indirect facilitation would carry significant weight, as national autonomy depends on institutions operating freely, lawfully, and without improper influence.

2. High-level legal and constitutional consequences

Within a normal legal framework, the deliberate deterioration of legal, security, or civil systems would fall within the most serious categories of wrongdoing. This is not a marginal or technical violation; it strikes at the foundation of governance itself and would be treated accordingly.

3. Complicity and liability

Even where actions are carried out through layers or intermediaries, any individual who knowingly facilitates, permits, or fails to act against such conduct could be regarded as complicit. The greatest degree of liability would rest with decision-makers at the highest level, with little implications at the ground level. The notion of "mere enabling" would not materially reduce the seriousness, particularly where such enabling is a necessary condition for external access or influence. However, in this scenario in question, it is plausible that the conduct extends beyond passive allowance to active orchestration or deliberate facilitation of systemic persecution and wrongdoing.

4. Breakdown of institutional integrity

Once institutions are capable of being bent or redirected in this manner, the broader legitimacy of their decisions is fundamentally undermined. Those involved in enabling such conduct would be directly associated with that loss of integrity, with long-term consequences for public trust, stability, and the functioning of the state.

5. Precedent risk

If such conduct occurs and is allowed to stand, it lowers the barrier to its recurrence. This creates an ongoing vulnerability within the system, and those who enabled it contribute to that vulnerability. The national security deterrence would take a serious dip, and it would undermine national strength (military, legal, diplomatic), the projection of power, and autonomy far into the future.

Once a "backdoor" is created for one foreign power, the door is effectively off the hinges for everyone else. If today and for the last two years it was some Pakistani force "making" the decision maker order multiple independent institutions in the UK viciously and relentlessly target someone, tomorrow it will be North Korea, China, India, and anybody really, making the enabler individual comply to foreign orders and do literally anything they want in the UK.

In such circumstances, the implications would result in a significant diplomatic and legal crisis concerning the UK's standing as a sovereign state. A government that can be coerced into persecuting an individual for such a long time is a government that can be coerced into surrendering military secrets, economic data, or territories. It would signal to the world that the UK's sovereignty can now be played with just by "making" one or few individuals at the top "do" things which are unheard of in the UK context. UK's powerful institutions, military, security systems, robust foreign office, and legal systems, seem to have been rendered meaningless, at least partially, and the budgets, the decades-long resources spent on their development, and maintenance of power, deterrence, and diplomacy seem to have been made useless by either the incompetence or willingness of one or few individuals at the top. One of the most powerful nations on earth seems to be bending to the command of a nation continent away to deteriorate systems, something that even the most powerful individuals within the UK couldn't do. Even the King

himself couldn't achieve such a task because unlawful and sustained criminal state behaviour seems to be at play.

Legal and Constitutional Consequences

I'm not a lawyer or expert in this domain, and a lot remains up to independent verification and auditing, but to me, what I am describing is extremely likely the case as this is an undeniable lived reality at this point, and I fully believe, it likely falls within the category of high-level constitutional or state wrongdoing. Whether it would meet the formal definition of "treason" depends on how that term is defined in law, but in terms of seriousness, it approaches that threshold, according to my research.

If a state actor permits a foreign power, military on top, to influence or direct institutional actions, this would, in effect, amount to a suspension of constitutional principles within that specific area.

Even if not classified as treason, depending on the system, such conduct could more appropriately align with offences such as:

- systemic abuse of public office
- conspiracy to subvert lawful authority
- misconduct undermining the constitutional order of the state

Again, I believe this would be treated as extremely serious, rising to the level of a foundational threat to the state. It marks a shift from maladministration to potential criminal activity carried out through state mechanisms.

Relevant legal categories or core criminal offenses could include misconduct in public office, conspiracy to subvert lawful authority, and conspiracy to procure unlawful acts through institutions under statutes such as the Criminal Law Act 1977. It may also encompass perverting the course of justice through the manipulation or suppression of processes, as well as breaches of the Human Rights Act 1998, particularly where inhumane treatment or denial of a fair

trial is involved. Most of these offences carry sentences up to life imprisonment.

Where foreign direction or assistance can be established, provisions under the National Security Act 2023 may be engaged, up to life imprisonment may well be on cards for that as well. This would significantly increase the seriousness of any other offenses. If such conduct were prolonged and severe, it would further aggravate the legal consequences.

Additionally, under the Serious Crime Act 2007, encouraging or assisting Grievous Bodily Harm may give rise to liability. Where a decision-maker enables or facilitates acts resulting in serious harm, they may be treated as an accomplice, with potential liability aligned with that of the principal offender, depending on the circumstances.

In my case, this relates to an assault that resulted in loss of my consciousness and an injury on my head. If the surrounding circumstances are taken at face value, it raises the possibility of coordination rather than an isolated incident. Although I will not focus on that point in detail here, I will summarise it: the malfunction of all CCTV cameras within two separate areas of that establishment that day despite the existence of a police report and police's request and attempt to access the footage, and the sudden appearance of unrelated individuals providing misleading accounts for his defence, adds to the irregularity.

These factors, alongside hours of preceding indications suggesting something beyond a single individual, contribute to a pattern that is difficult to reconcile as incidental. This incident culminated my weeks-long effort to re-engage socially and break free from what felt like imposed isolation amid ongoing threats and hostility; it felt as though the threats from previous days had been acted upon. Such patterns of threats or harm are not isolated in my

experience anyway. They have occurred repeatedly, particularly when I attempt to engage in social activity. The incident in question does not stand apart but appears consistent with a broader trend that has persisted over time.

Circling back, there may also be elements of abuse of authority and coercive misuse of power within this situation.

For me personally as a target, coercive control and denial of support and social life, as discussed at length in preceding sections, could also apply, which would be another criminal offense.

Something already touched upon: the aggravating factors would include foreign involvement, sustained, long-term, or systematic conduct, harm inflicted through the use of state mechanisms, and interference with judicial or legal systems' independence. These factors would likely place any resulting case at the upper end of seriousness in terms of both legal and constitutional consequences.

I believe partial "surrender of sovereignty" or more precisely "subversion of constitutional order" in this situation, would be an accurate way to characterize it because: core state institutions (government, legal systems, law enforcement, security) seem to consistently be acting against their intended function and appear to effectively be unable to operate independently. If this is indeed the case, then the country's ability to make decisions independently wouldn't just be weakened or diluted, it would be functionally surrendered in practice, even if not formally declared, regardless of the scope, whether it is about one individual or multiple. This could carry additional legal consequences.

The situation is further aggravated by its impact on an individual with a prolonged history of abuse and persecution and a claim to refuge and protection. In the absence of apparent official enabling, such circumstances would not ordinarily arise within the UK. If an

external actor were able to access a victim or influence his treatment within UK jurisdiction, this would raise serious concerns under asylum and protection principles. Allowing a source of prior harm to reach or affect a protected individual could, in effect, amount to a de facto breach of non-refoulement obligations, undermining the very purpose of protection by reintroducing risk into what is intended to be a place of safety, making safety a sham. By giving a persecutor access to a victim's safe space, and bringing the danger to the victim, the state would effectively be partnering with the abuser.

Patterns resembling the state-led life-threatening dynamics I experienced in Pakistan appear, from my perspective, to be recurring as well in the UK. These patterns, coupled with others discussed above, appear to operate in ways that restrict social engagement, create a persistent sense of threat, and attempt to frame me as something I am not. While I remain cautious in interpreting these experiences, given the apparent creation of artificial situations and efforts to manufacture justifications that could be used as pretexts for harm, the recurrence of these patterns is concerning. Although such attempts have not, to this day, succeeded in establishing those pretexts, their repetition is a concern particularly in terms of potential future risk.

I will again restate this, the intensity and persistence of the broader patterns have been notable, particularly in situations involving ordinary daily or social activity. They appear to arise unusually frequently whenever I attempt to engage in meaningful aspects of daily life. In the context of the UK, if such patterns were found to involve enabling, facilitation, or failure to prevent harm, this would further amount to a serious matter. In that case, responsibility would extend beyond individual incidents and would involve decision-makers whose actions allowed such conditions to persist.

Lastly, if elements of this situation were substantiated, responsibility would not necessarily rest with intermediary actors or proxies. The responsibility, even if not established, will rest with the broader malignant force discussed throughout this book, and on those in positions of authority who allowed this saga to occur. In that sense, scrutiny would most appropriately be directed toward decision-making body within the UK, rather than disproportionately attributing blame to external or intermediary actors.

It is important to clarify that the above description is based on observed patterns, repeated experiences, and the cumulative interpretation of events over time. While the full extent of what is occurring cannot be conclusively established without access to internal records, decision-making chains, and institutional data, the consistency, duration, and nature of these experiences make alternative explanations increasingly difficult to reconcile. The scenario described is therefore not presented as a definitive claim in all its elements, but as an extremely plausible interpretation that warrants serious scrutiny.

At the same time, the threshold for what is being suggested at its highest level is acknowledged to be exceptionally high. Assertions involving external direction, institutional compromise, or subversion of constitutional order require correspondingly strong evidence. However, the absence of immediate proof does not negate the possibility, particularly where patterns appear sustained and resistant to ordinary explanations. The purpose of this framing is not to assert certainty beyond what can be demonstrated, but to outline the full range of implications if the observed phenomena are accurately indicative of deeper underlying causes.

Epilogue

If this book has made any sense at all, I would like to ask the reader to commit to one thing. It is the only insistence I make. Despite the injustices inflicted upon Western nations, there must remain a willingness to offer forgiveness for what has already occurred, if these patterns cease soon. Recognition of the gravity of malicious schemes is non-negotiable. Understanding matters. Vigilance matters. But so does kindness where it is needed. It is the right thing to do.

I began this book by asking what happens when an individual's voice is singled out and silenced covertly and relentlessly for daring to speak thoughts shared by millions but despised by a few.

Before this, I had already walked through successive persecutions and abusive dynamics from my home country and had high hopes for the future when I came to the UK. However, with this third layer of persecution in the mix, I have lost much of my spirit, hope, and a sense of safety. I continue to face uncertainty about my very life. It's a nasty and heavy feeling but I have been living with it for over more than one and a half years. I'm not new to it anyway; this is a gift from my family abusers, and I'm accustomed to it.

What you have read is not simply my story; it is a warning. If one life can be so quietly sabotaged, if one voice can be so persistently undermined, what happens when the same tactics are scaled to entire societies? This is not speculation. It is happening now, in small ways and large, as the West continues being weakened, is made to doubt itself, to despise itself, to surrender its very existence. The subversion is not succeeding though. It is failing and will continue to fail more spectacularly as time passes by.

If there is any takeaway from this book, it should be this: Western civilization is resilient in ways not appreciated enough. Its people have been patient, accommodating, and remarkably tolerant—far more

than any other civilization would have been under similar provocation, traits worth preserving. But make no mistake: when it comes to survival, the West always finds a way. It has done so before. It will do so again. Its sheer ingenuity makes recovery inevitable.

The Huns once stormed as far as France, holding half of Europe in their grip, yet Europe recovered. The Mongols marched across the continent, reaching deep into Hungary, and still, Europe rose again. At Thermopylae, when the situation appeared beyond hope in one of history's most lopsided confrontations, the catastrophe was delayed and the tide was ultimately turned. The Ottomans conquered Constantinople, the spiritual heart of the West, and marched to the gates of Vienna after centuries of advance, yet that tide was turned back, and the lands reclaimed. The Moors crossed into Spain and pressed into the heart of France, but in time, Europe endured, prevailed, and reversed the damages.

Time and again, when it seemed as though the situation was impossible, Western civilization found a way to recover and prosper. Its resilience is unmatched in history.

When viewed in hindsight, and measured against the gifts Europe has given the modern world since, humanity should be grateful that Europe recovered from its past calamities. In the same spirit, the world should now hope for, and actively wish for, the recovery of the West once again.

References

References include a full stop at the end of URLs in accordance with standard citation practice. When opening or copying links, readers should omit the trailing full stop.

"20 Years of Erasmus Mundus," Publications Office of the EU, May 22, 2024, https://op.europa.eu/en/publication-detail/-/publication/fa2067a3-18cb-11ef-a251-01aa75ed71a1/language-en.

"160 Years of German-Japanese Friendship: Germany's Role in Japan's Modernization," *Nippon.Com,* December 27, 2021, https://www.nippon.com/en/japan-topics/g02012/.

"AGRA – Sustainably Growing Africa's Food Systems," accessed November 15, 2025, https://agra.org/.

"Agricultural Development," Gates Foundation, accessed November 15, 2025, https://www.gatesfoundation.org/our-work/programs/global-growth-and-opportunity/agricultural-development.

Alex Clark, "Europe's Population Crisis: See How Your Country Compares – Visualised," *The Guardian,* February 18, 2025, https://www.theguardian.com/world/ng-interactive/2025/feb/18/europes-population-crisis-see-how-your-country-compares-visualised.

Alex Ezeh et al., "Why Sub-Saharan Africa Might Exceed Its Projected Population Size by 2100," *The Lancet 396*, no. 10258 (2020): 1131 - 1133, https://doi.org/10.1016/S0140-6736(20)31522-1.

Alex He, "What Do China's High Patent Numbers Really Mean?," *Centre for International Governance Innovation,* April 20, 2021, https://www.cigionline.org/articles/what-do-chinas-high-patent-numbers-really-mean/.

Andy Levesque, "What Happens When Two Narcissists Are in a Relationship? - Circles," *Circlesup*, December 22, 2024, https://circlesup.com/blog/two-narcissists-in-a-relationship/.

Anne Soy, "China's Belt and Road Initiative: Kenya and a Railway to Nowhere," *BBC News*, October 13, 2023, https://www.bbc.co.uk/news/world-africa-67101736.

Anoushka Pant, "Zero," Encyclopedia Britannica, July 11, 2025, https://www.britannica.com/science/zero-mathematics.

Arash Emamzadeh, "Why Narcissists Get Promoted So Quickly," *Psychology Today*, October 25, 2021, https://www.psychologytoday.com/gb/blog/finding-a-new-home/202110/why-narcissists-get-promoted-so-quickly.

Ariel Kates, "The Animal Rights Movement's Origins (and Still-Visible Legacy) in Greenwich Village - Village Preservation," *Village Preservation - Greenwich Village Society for Historic Preservation,* May 29, 2020, https://www.villagepreservation.org/2020/05/29/the-animal-rights-movements-origins-and-still-visible-legacy-in-greenwich-village/.

Arlin Cuncic, "What Is Narcissistic Rage?," *Verywell Mind,* May 27, 2021, https://www.verywellmind.com/what-is-narcissistic-rage-5183744.

Asif Shahzad, "Pakistan Rejects Ousted PM Khan's Accusation That U.S. Conspired to Topple Him," *Reuters,* April 22, 2022, https://www.reuters.com/world/asia-pacific/pakistan-rejects-ousted-pm-khans-accusation-that-us-conspired-topple-him-2022-04-22/.

BBC Bitesize, "19th-Century Advances in Medical Knowledge - the Germ Theory - Advances in Medical Knowledge - Eduqas - GCSE History Revision - Eduqas," *BBC Bitesize*, August 24, 2022, https://www.bbc.co.uk/bitesize/guides/zsprg7h/revision/5.

BBC Bitesize, "Discovering the Structure of DNA," *BBC Bitesize*, May 17, 2019, https://www.bbc.co.uk/bitesize/articles/z4pd382.

"BBC - History - Historic Figures: Jethro Tull (1674," 1741), accessed November 9, 2025, https://www.bbc.co.uk/history/historic_figures/tull_jethro.shtml.

"BBC - History - Historic Figures: Kilby and Noyce (1923-2005)," accessed November 8, 2025, https://www.bbc.co.uk/history/historic_figures/kilby_and_noyce.shtml.

BBC, "In Our Time - Nero to Zero: The Rise and Fall of a Brutal Roman Emperor," *BBC*, May 3, 2019, https://www.bbc.co.uk/programmes/articles/4DwgbSMcR5WZcx

YjC2p1c9Z/nero-to-zero-the-rise-and-fall-of-a-brutal-roman-emperor.

BBC News, "Qian Xuesen: The Man the US Deported - Who Then Helped China into Space," *BBC News*, October 27, 2020, https://www.bbc.co.uk/news/stories-54695598.

Bill Kte'pi, "Environmental Science," *Encyclopedia Britannica*, April 12, 2014, https://www.britannica.com/science/environmental-science.

Biography.com Editors, "Ivan the Terrible," *Biography*, November 20, 2023, https://www.biography.com/royalty/a45896491/ivan-the-terrible.

"Black and White Thinking", accessed December 19, 2025, https://www.webmd.com/mental-health/black-and-white-thinking.

Brandon OConnor, "West Point Cadets Build Important Connections with Army War College International Fellows," www.army.mil, October 7, 2019.

Britannica Editors, "Phalaris," *Encyclopedia Britannica*, July 20, 1998, https://www.britannica.com/biography/Phalaris.

Britannica Editors, "François Hennebique," *Encyclopedia Britannica*, July 20, 1998, https://www.britannica.com/biography/Francois-Hennebique.

Britannica Editors, "Paleontology," *Encyclopedia Britannica*, July 20, 1998, https://www.britannica.com/science/paleontology.

Britannica Editors, "Silk," *Encyclopedia Britannica*, July 20, 1998, https://www.britannica.com/topic/silk.

Browne, A. (2000, September 3). The last days of a white world. *The Guardian.* https://www.theguardian.com/uk/2000/sep/03/race.world.

Cecilia Bahou, "Understanding Narcissistic Triangulation," *Medical News Today*, December 17, 2024, https://www.medicalnewstoday.com/articles/narcissistic-triangulation.

"CGIAR: Science for Humanity's Greatest Challenges," CGIAR, April 7, 2025, https://www.cgiar.org/.

Charles A. McClelland, "International Relations," *Encyclopedia Britannica*, July 20, 1998, https://www.britannica.com/topic/international-relations.

Charles A O'Reilly and Nicholas Hall, "Grandiose Narcissists and Decision Making: Impulsive, Overconfident, and Skeptical of Experts-but Seldom in Doubt," *Personality and Individual Differences* 168 (January 2021): 110280, https://doi.org/10.1016/j.paid.2020.110280.

Charlie Health Editorial Team, "Things Narcissists Say In An Argument (& What They Really Mean)," *Charlie Health,* September 8, 2023, https://www.charliehealth.com/post/things-narcissists-say-in-an-.

Charlotte L. Kellner, "Alexander von Humboldt," *Encyclopedia Britannica,* July 20, 1998, https://www.britannica.com/biography/Alexander-von-Humboldt.

Christal Hayes, "Virginia Giuffre, Prince Andrew and Jeffrey Epstein Accuser, Dies by Suicide," *BBC News,* April 26, 2025, https://www.bbc.co.uk/news/articles/cql67qk0dd3o.

"Commodus," British Museum, accessed December 19, 2025, https://www.britishmuseum.org/collection/term/BIOG140659.

Criminology.com, "The History of Criminology," *Criminology*, December 12, 2018, https://www.criminology.com/the-history-of-criminology-2/.

"C.V. Raman The Raman Effect - Landmark," American Chemical Society, accessed November 9, 2025, https://www.acs.org/education/whatischemistry/landmarks/ramaneffect.html.

"DAAD-Scholarships," www.daad.de, accessed November 9, 2025, https://www.daad.de/en/studying-in-germany/scholarships/daad-scholarships/.

"DataSaudi," accessed November 10, 2025, https://datasaudi.sa/en.

Darlene Lancer, "The Concept of Narcissistic Supply," *Psychology Today,* August 7, 2021, https://www.psychologytoday.com/gb/blog/toxic-relationships/202108/the-concept-of-narcissistic-supply.

Dana Sparks, "Narcissistic Personality Disorder: Inflated Sense Of Importance" *Mayo Clinic News Network*, September 15, 2020, https://newsnetwork.mayoclinic.org/discussion/narcissistic-personality-disorder-inflated-sense-of-importance/.

David Shotwell, "Glass A to Z," *Krause Publications*, 2002.

"Democracy (Ancient Greece)," accessed November 11, 2025, https://education.nationalgeographic.org/resource/democracy-ancient-greece/.

"Dionysius," accessed December 19, 2025, https://www.thelatinlibrary.com/historians/notes/dionysius.html.

"Dutch Farmers Protest Government's Strict Nitrogen Rules," *The Poultry Site,* accessed December 3, 2025, https://www.thepoultrysite.com/news/2022/06/dutch-farmers-protest-governments-strict-nitrogen-rules.

"Economics," Encyclopedia Britannica, accessed November 11, 2025, https://www.britannica.com/money/economics.

"Eco-Schemes," Agriculture and Rural Development, accessed December 3, 2025, https://agriculture.ec.europa.eu/common-agricultural-policy/income-support/eco-schemes_en.

Eddie Brummelman et al., "Origins of Narcissism in Children," *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences* 112, no. 12 (2015): 3659 - 3662, https://doi.org/10.1073/pnas.1420870112.

"Elagabalus: The Hated Roman Emperor Who Was Killed And Mutilated!," *Ancient Origins Reconstructing the Story of Humanity's Past,* accessed December 19, 2025, https://www.ancient-origins.net/history-famous-people/elagabalus-0014728.

Emmanuel Igunza, "Arshad Sharif: Mystery over Killing of Pakistani Journalist in Kenya," *BBC News,* October 29, 2022, https://www.bbc.co.uk/news/world-africa-63426794.

"Engines," *NASA Aeronautics and Space Administration,* accessed January 6, 2026, https://www.grc.nasa.gov/www/k-12/UEET/StudentSite/engines.html.

"Enhancing National Security by Addressing Risks at Harvard University," *The White House*, June 4, 2025, https://www.whitehouse.gov/presidential-actions/2025/06/enhancing-national-security-by-addressing-risks-at-harvard-university/.

Eric W. Dolan, "Narcissists, Psychopaths, and Sadists Often Believe They Are Morally Superior," *PsyPost Psychology News*, August 21, 2024, https://www.psypost.org/narcissists-psychopaths-and-sadists-often-believe-they-are-morally-superior/.

Ester di Giacomo et al., "The Dark Side of Empathy in Narcissistic Personality Disorder," *Frontiers in Psychiatry* 14 (March 2023), https://doi.org/10.3389/fpsyt.2023.1074558.

"Eurostat," Eurostat, accessed November 10, 2025, https://ec.europa.eu/eurostat/web/interactive-publications/migration-2023.

"Ford Signs Automobile Contract with Soviet Union," *EBSCO*, accessed November 9, 2025, https://www.ebsco.com/research-starters/history/ford-signs-automobile-contract-soviet-union.

"Foreign Fulbright Program," Foreign Student Program, accessed November 9, 2025, https://foreign.fulbrightonline.org/about/foreign-student-program.

Foresight, "Global Population Is Growing," *Knowledge for Policy*, accessed November 15, 2025, https://knowledge4policy.ec.europa.eu/foresight/global-population-growing_en.

Franco Cavazzi, "Caracalla AD 188-217 - a Cruel Tyrant and Savage Emperor," Ginjomantas, December 14, 2021, https://roman-empire.net/decline/caracalla.

"General 1 — History of Oil & Gas in Qatar," History of Oil & Gas in Qatar, accessed November 10, 2025, https://www.historyofoilgasinqatar.com/module-2.

"Global HIV & AIDS Statistics — Fact Sheet," *UNAIDS*, accessed November 15, 2025, https://www.unaids.org/en/resources/fact-sheet.

Glyn Edmund Daniel, "Archaeology," *Encyclopedia Britannica*, July 26, 1999, https://www.britannica.com/science/archaeology/First-steps-to-archaeology.

Greg Miller, "CIA Pays for Support in Pakistan: It Has Spent Millions Funding the ISI Spy Agency, despite Fears of Corruption. But Some Say It Is Worth It.," *Los Angeles Times*, November 15, 2009, https://www.latimes.com/archives/la-xpm-2009-nov-15-fg-cia-pakistan15-story.html.

"Gregor Mendel: The 'Father of Genetics,'" *John Innes Centre*, accessed November 8, 2025, https://www.jic.ac.uk/research-impact/our-strategic-research-programmes/harnessing-biosynthesis-for-

sustainable-food-and-health-hbio/impact/peas/the-history-of-pea-research-at-the-john-innes-centre/gregor-mendel-the-father-of-genetics/.

Guyonne Rogier et al., "Pathological Narcissism and Sadistic Personality: The Role of Rivalry and Malicious Envy," *Personality and Individual Differences* 205 (April 2023): 112097, https://doi.org/10.1016/j.paid.2023.112097.

Hannah Ritchie, "More than 8 out of 10 People in the World Will Live in Asia or Africa by 2100," *Our World in Data,* July 15, 2019, https://ourworldindata.org/region-population-2100.

"High Level Narcissists - Their Bottomless Well of Psychological Emptiness," accessed December 22, 2025, https://thenarcissistinyourlife.libsyn.com/high-level-narcissists-their-bottomless-well-of-psychological-emptiness.

Hiroyuki Odagiri and Akira Goto, "The Post-War Technological Progress and Government Policies," in Technology and Industrial Development in Japan, *Oxford University Press*, 1996, https://doi.org/10.1093/acprof:oso/9780198288022.003.0003.

"Home," *Heifer International*, November 1, 2025, https://www.heifer.org/.

"Homepage," *Mercy Corps*, accessed November 15, 2025, https://www.mercycorps.org/.

Hope Therapy & Counselling Services, "The Link between Trauma and Narcissism," *Counselling Directory*, May 12, 2023, https://www.counselling-directory.org.uk/articles/the-link-between-trauma-and-narcissism.

Iain Todd and Jess Wilder, "50 of the Greatest, Most Famous Astronomers of All Time," *BBC Sky at Night Magazine*, July 15, 2024, https://www.skyatnightmagazine.com/space-science/famous-astronomers.

Imogen Foulkes and Alex Boyd, "US Cuts to HIV Aid Will Cost Millions of Lives - UNAids Chief," *BBC News*, March 24, 2025, https://www.bbc.co.uk/news/articles/c4ge1xjrze7o.

International Energy Agency, Boosting the Power Sector in Sub-Saharan Africa (EN), n.d. https://www.oecd.org/content/dam/oecd/en/publications/report

s/2016/08/boosting-the-power-sector-in-sub-saharan-africa_g1g6d840/9789264262706-en.pdf.

"International Students - IIE Open Doors," *IIE Open Doors / International Students,* January 7, 2022, https://opendoorsdata.org/annual-release/international-students/.

I O Abramova, "The Population of Africa under the Conditions of Transformation of the World Order - PMC," *Herald of the Russian Academy of Sciences* 92, no. Suppl 14 (n.d.), https://doi.org/10.1134/S1019331622200023.

ITRI. "Adopting Technical Knowledge from RCA to Develop Taiwan's IC Capabilities." *50 Years of Empowering Industry Through Innovations*. Accessed October 22, 2025. https://50th.itri.org.tw/en/history/semiconductors/1/.

Iulia O Basu-Zharku, "The Reign of Peter the Great," *Inquiries Journal 3*, no. 01 (2011).

"James Hutton: The Founder of Modern Geology," American Museum of Natural History, accessed November 11, 2025, https://www.amnh.org/learn-teach/curriculum-collections/earth-inside-and-out/james-hutton.

James Temple, "Bill Gates: Rich Nations Should Shift Entirely to Synthetic Beef," *MIT Technology Review*, February 14, 2021, https://www.technologyreview.com/2021/02/14/1018296/bill-gates-climate-change-beef-trees-microsoft/.

"Japanese Battleship: 'Kashima' or 'Katori,'" *Royal Museums Greenwich*, accessed November 9, 2025, https://www.rmg.co.uk/collections/objects/rmgc-object-126009.

J. Brookes Spencer, "Scientific Revolution," *Encyclopedia Britannica*, May 3, 2019, https://www.britannica.com/science/Scientific-Revolution.

Jeanne Batalova, "International Students in the United States," Migrationpolicy.Org, July 23, 2025, https://www.migrationpolicy.org/article/international-students-united-states.

Joseph Burgo Ph.D., "Narcissism and Other Defenses Against Shame," *Psychology Today*, November 17, 2012, https://www.psychologytoday.com/gb/blog/shame/201211/narcissism-and-other-defenses-against-shame.

Joshua D Miller et al., "Narcissistic Personality Disorder: Relations with Distress and Functional Impairment," *Comprehensive Psychiatry* 48, no. 2 (2007): 170 - 7, https://doi.org/10.1016/j.comppsych.2006.10.003.

Julian Borger, "There Were No Weapons of Mass Destruction in Iraq," *The Guardian,* October 7, 2004, https://www.theguardian.com/world/2004/oct/07/usa.iraq1.

Julie L. Hall, "7 Reasons Narcissists Rarely Grow Emotionally," *Psychology Today,* March 4, 2022, https://www.psychologytoday.com/us/blog/the-narcissist-in-your-life/202203/7-reasons-narcissists-rarely-grow-emotionally.

Julie L. Hall, "The Narcissist's Airtight Victim Narrative," *Psychology Today,* March 5, 2023, https://www.psychologytoday.com/gb/blog/the-narcissist-in-your-life/202303/the-narcissists-airtight-victim-narrative.

Kaukab Shairani, "Crying Senator Says He's Being Blackmailed With a Secretly Filmed Video of Him and His Wife," *VICE,* November 8, 2022, https://www.vice.com/en/article/azam-swati-wife-secretly-filmed-leaked-video/.

Lars Schulze et al., "Gray Matter Abnormalities in Patients with Narcissistic Personality Disorder," *Journal of Psychiatric Research* 47, no. 10 (2013): 1363 - 9, https://doi.org/10.1016/j.jpsychires.2013.05.017.

Laura Gozzi, "Why Europe's Farmers Are Taking Their Anger to the Streets," *BBC News*, January 27, 2024, https://www.bbc.co.uk/news/world-europe-68095097.

Li, Bo, and Michela Giorcelli. "Technology Transfer and Early Industrial Development: The Case of the Sino-Soviet Alliance." *CEPR*. Accessed January 16, 2026. https://cepr.org/voxeu/columns/technology-transfer-and-early-industrial-development-case-sino-soviet-alliance.

"Linguistics," accessed November 11, 2025, https://education.nationalgeographic.org/resource/linguistics/.

LPCC Dr. Sharie Stines, "The Arbitrary Rules of Narcissists," *Psych Central*, December 7, 2019, https://psychcentral.com/pro/recovery-expert/2019/12/the-arbitrary-rules-of-narcissists#2.

LPC Meaghan Rice PsyD., "Narcissistic Rage: Identifying & Protecting Yourself — Talkspace," *Mental Health Conditions*, September 27, 2023, https://www.talkspace.com/mental-health/conditions/articles/narcissistic-rage/.

LPC Meaghan Rice PsyD., "What Is Narcissistic Gaslighting? — Talkspace," *Mental Health Conditions*, February 7, 2022, https://www.talkspace.com/mental-health/conditions/articles/narcissistic-gas-lighting/.

Malin K. Hildebrandt et al., "Impulsivity Mediates the Association between Narcissism and Substance-Related Problems beyond the Degree of Substance Use: A Longitudinal Observational Study," *BMC Psychiatry 24*, no. 1 (2024), https://doi.org/10.1186/s12888-024-05718-y.

MD Dr. Ananya Mandal, "Seven Deadly Sins of Narcissism," *News-Medical*, July 12, 2010, https://www.news-medical.net/health/Seven-Deadly-Sins-of-Narcissism.aspx.

"Measuring China's Manufacturing Might," *ChinaPower Project,* December 17, 2024, https://chinapower.csis.org/tracker/china-manufacturing/.

Michael G. Roskin, "Political Science," *Encyclopedia Britannica*, July 26, 1999, https://www.britannica.com/topic/political-science/Historical-development.

Michael M Horowitz, "Anthropology," *Encyclopedia Britannica*, July 20, 1998, https://www.britannica.com/science/anthropology.

"Migrant Labour Key to Boosting Employment in the EU," *Migration and Home Affairs,* accessed December 3, 2025, https://home-affairs.ec.europa.eu/news/migrant-labour-key-boosting-employment-eu-2025-10-14_en.

"Narcissistic Personality Disorder," *Cleveland Clinic,* August 15, 2023, https://my.clevelandclinic.org/health/diseases/9742-narcissistic-personality-disorder.

"Narcissistic Personality Disorder: Guide for Providers at McLean Hospital," accessed December 18, 2025, https://www.mcleanhospital.org/npd-provider-guide.

Narc Survivor, "Why The Narcissist Is Restless," *Narc Survivor,* October 20, 2022, https://www.narcsurvivor.co.uk/post/why-the-narcissist-is-restless.

"New Alliance Announced between Imperial College and King Abdullah University of Science and Technology," *Imperial News*, accessed November 10, 2025, https://www.imperial.ac.uk/news/30514/new-alliance-announced-between-imperial-college/.

NGO Finance, "Large NGOs: The Most Influential and Impactful Non-Governmental Organizations in 2025," *NGO Finance Hub,* August 27, 2025, https://ngofinancehub.com/large-ngos/.

Nick Miller, "Who Was Roman Emperor Domitian and Why Was He Assassinated?," *Discovery UK,* April 3, 2023, https://www.discoveryuk.com/monarchs-and-rulers/who-was-roman-emperor-domitian-and-why-was-he-assassinated/.

Nicole Sganga, "Chinese Hackers Took Trillions in Intellectual Property from about 30 Multinational Companies," *CBS News,* May 4, 2022, https://www.cbsnews.com/news/chinese-hackers-took-trillions-in-intellectual-property-from-about-30-multinational-companies/.

"Nobel Prize in Physics 1983," *NobelPrize.Org*, accessed November 9, 2025, https://www.nobelprize.org/prizes/physics/1983/chandrasekhar/biographical/.

Oelkers, Jürgen. 2002. "Rousseau and the Image of 'Modern Education.'" *Journal of Curriculum Studies* 34 (6): 679–98. doi:10.1080/00220270210141936.

"Office of the President," KAUST, accessed November 10, 2025, https://www.kaust.edu.sa/en/about/administration/office-of-the-president.

"Official Development Assistance (ODA) 2023 Final Figures," accessed October 29, 2025, https://www.oecd.org/en/events/2025/01/official-development-assistance-oda-2023-final-figures.html.

"One Acre Fund," *One Acre Fund,* accessed November 15, 2025, https://oneacrefund.org/.

"Origin and Growth of Presidency College," accessed November 9, 2025, https://www.pcaachennai.com/Courses-in-the-Beginning.html.

Petros Symeonidis, "The Top 10 Largest Economies in the World by GDP," *FocusEconomics,* December 16, 2025, https://www.focus-economics.com/blog/the-largest-economies-in-the-world/

Prabhu Chawla, "Not Breaking India Is Soros's Sorrow," *The New Indian Express,* December 14, 2024, https://www.newindianexpress.com/opinion/columns/pc/2024/Dec/14/not-breaking-india-is-soross-sorrow.

"Pilkington Award," accessed November 9, 2025, https://sgt.org/page/PilkingtonAward.

"Professor Abdus Salam (1926-1996), Nobel Prize in Physics 1979," *Imperial College London,* accessed November 9, 2025, https://www.imperial.ac.uk/about/introducing-imperial/our-people/award-winners/nobel-winners/abdus-salam/.

"Qin Shi Huangdi," *National Geographic*, December 19, 2025, https://www.nationalgeographic.com/culture/article/qin-shi-huangdi.

Rachael Wheatley and Clare Conway, "Stalking, Narcissistic Vulnerability and the Application of Schema Therapy 'I Was Punishing Her for Me Not Being Good Enough,'" *Journal of Criminal Psychology* 13, no. 2 (2023): 76 - 90, https://doi.org/10.1108/JCP-07-2021-0025.

Rebecca Lee, "The Ties Between Crime and Malignant Narcissism," *Psych Central,* August 18, 2017, https://psychcentral.com/blog/the-ties-between-crime-and-malignant-narcissism#1.

Reuters, "Trump Says China Will Supply Rare Earths, US to Allow Students," *Reuters*, June 11, 2025, https://www.reuters.com/world/china/trump-says-china-will-supply-rare-earths-us-allow-students-2025-06-11/.

Robert Gaynes, "The Discovery of Penicillin—New Insights After More Than 75 Years of Clinical Use - PMC," *Emerging Infectious Diseases* 23, no. 5 (n.d.), https://doi.org/10.3201/eid2305.161556.

Robin McKie, "The 10 Best Physicists," *The Guardian,* May 11, 2013, https://www.theguardian.com/culture/gallery/2013/may/12/the-10-best-physicists.

"Saudi Aramco," *Encyclopedia Britannica*, accessed November 10, 2025, https://www.britannica.com/money/Saudi-Aramco.

"Scholarships," Commonwealth Scholarship Commission in the UK, June 2, 2019, https://cscuk.fcdo.gov.uk/about-us/scholarships/.

"Seattle Schools Propose To Teach That Math Education Is Racist—Will California Be Far Behind?," *Hoover Institution*, accessed January 12,

2026, https://www.hoover.org/research/seattle-schools-propose-teach-math-education-racist-will-california-be-far-behindseattle.

Shahida Arabi, "12 Of The Most Common Lies Sociopaths And Narcissists Tell, Translated Into Truth," *Psych Central,* September 5, 2018, https://psychcentral.com/blog/recovering-narcissist/2018/09/12-of-the-most-common-lies-sociopaths-and-narcissists-tell-translated-into-truth.

Sheldon Reid, "Malignant Narcissist: Symptoms, Treatments, and Tips," Sheldon Reid, April 21, 2025, https://www.helpguide.org/mental-health/personality-disorders/malignant-narcissist.

Shubhajit Roy, "Disappointing: US Responds to BJP's Allegation of Backing Agenda to Destabilise India," *The Indian Express,* December 8, 2024, https://indianexpress.com/article/india/us-embassy-bjp-deep-state-accusations-disappointing-9712127/.

"Silk Worms Are Smuggled to the Byzantine Empire," *EBSCO*, accessed November 9, 2025, https://www.ebsco.com/research-starters/history/silk-worms-are-smuggled-byzantine-empire.

Simine Vazire and David C. Funder, "Impulsivity and the Self-Defeating Behavior of Narcissists," *Personality and Social Psychology Review* 10, no. 2 (2006): 154 - 165, https://doi.org/10.1207/s15327957pspr1002_4.

Smith, Christopher. "The Origins of the Tribunate of the Plebs." *Antichthon* 46 (2012): 101-125, https://doi.org/10.1017/S0066477400000162.

"Sociology in the Nineteenth Century," *EBSCO*, accessed November 11, 2025, https://www.ebsco.com/research-starters/history/sociology-nineteenth-century.

Susan Fishman, "Spotting and Dealing with a Smear Campaign by a Narcissist," *Psych Central*, March 16, 2017, https://psychcentral.com/disorders/ways-narcissists-smear-others.

Suzanne Degges-White Ph.D., "Why Narcissists Feel So Entitled," *Psychology Today*, May 6, 2022, https://www.psychologytoday.com/gb/blog/lifetime-connections/202205/why-narcissists-feel-so-entitled.

Taiwan Semiconductor Manufacturing Company, "Philips, TSMC and EDB Investments Team to Develop New Chip Production Facility,"

Taiwan Semiconductor Manufacturing Company, January 1, 1970, https://pr.tsmc.com/english/news/2115.

TBS Report, "Bangladesh Economy to Grow at 8% in FY19-20: ADB," *The Business Standard,* September 25, 2019, https://www.tbsnews.net/economy/adb-projects-8-gdp-growth-bangladesh-2020.

"TechnoServe: Global Impact," *TechnoServe*, July 2, 2020, https://www.technoserve.org/.

The Economist, "Taiwan's Dominance of the Chip Industry Makes It More Important," *The Economist,* March 6, 2023, https://www.economist.com/special-report/2023/03/06/taiwans-dominance-of-the-chip-industry-makes-it-more-important.

"The Rhodes Scholarship," *Rhodes Trust*, accessed December 29, 2025, https://www.rhodeshouse.ox.ac.uk/scholarships/the-rhodes-scholarship/.

"The Roman Empire: In the First Century. The Roman Empire. Emperors. Caligula," *PBS*, accessed December 19, 2025, https://www.pbs.org/empires/romans/empire/caligula.html.

"The Transistor – an Invention Ahead of Its Time," *Ericsson.Com*, accessed November 8, 2025, https://www.ericsson.com/en/about-us/history/products/other-products/the-transistor--an-invention-ahead-of-its-time.

Toby Huff, "Civilizational Analysis and Paths Not Taken, Part II: The Great Divergence," *Comparative Civilizations Review*, Volume 76, Article 7, April 25, 2017, https://scholarsarchive.byu.edu/cgi/viewcontent.cgi?article=1998&context=ccr.

Toketemu Ohwovoriole, "Can a Narcissist Change?," *Verywell Mind*, August 11, 2023, https://www.verywellmind.com/can-a-narcissist-change-7567893.

Ulrika Royen, "TU YOUYOU," *NobelPrize.Org*, April 29, 2025, https://www.nobelprize.org/stories/women-who-changed-science/tu-youyou/.

"United Nations Peacekeeping," *United Nations Peacekeeping*, accessed December 3, 2025, https://peacekeeping.un.org/en.

U.S. Embassy Tunis, "The United States Injects USD $50 Million into Tunisia's Tourism Sector with the Visit Tunisia Project," *U.S. Embassy in Tunisia,* February 2, 2022, https://tn.usembassy.gov/the-united-states-injects-usd-50-million-into-tunisias-tourism-sector-with-the-visit-tunisia-project/.

"U.S. Soy Sustainability Assurance Protocol," 2024, https://ussoybean.jp/asset/data/ssap_bookket_2024en.pdf.

"U.S. Suspends Controversial Outsourcing Training Program," *Suffolk County Democratic Committee,* September 3, 2014, https://suffolkcountydems.com/content/us-suspends-controversial-outsourcing-training-program-0.

"Waging War: Yamamoto and World War II," *National Museum of the Pacific War,* January 11, 2025, https://www.pacificwarmuseum.org/learn/articles/waging-war.

Walter Mischel, "Psychology," *Encyclopedia Britannica*, July 20, 1998, https://www.britannica.com/science/psychology.

"We Are Practical Action," *Practical Action*, August 15, 2022, https://practicalaction.org/.

Web Desk, "Did US Plot Sheikh Hasina's Ouster? What Bangladesh Ex-PM Said in Her Undelivered Speech," *The Week,* August 11, 2024, https://www.theweek.in/news/world/2024/08/11/did-us-plot-sheikh-hasinas-ouster-what-bangladesh-ex-pm-said-in-her-undelivered-speech.html.

"Who Is the Father of AI and Machine Learning?," *LSMT*, accessed November 9, 2025, https://lsmt.org.uk/blog/who-is-the-father-of-ai-and-machine-learning.

World Population Review, "Bangladesh Population 2025," *World Population Review,* November 13, 2025, https://worldpopulationreview.com/countries/bangladesh.

World Population Review, "United Kingdom Population 2025," *World Population Review,* November 13, 2025, https://worldpopulationreview.com/countries/united-kingdom.

World Population Review, "United States Population 2025," *World Population Review,* November 13, 2025, https://worldpopulationreview.com/countries/united-states.

Yashraj Sharma, "How George Soros Became 'Enemy Number 1' for India's Modi," *Al Jazeera,* December 26, 2024, https://www.aljazeera.com/news/2024/12/26/how-george-soros-became-enemy-number-1-for-indias-modi.

Yong, N. "Industrial espionage: How China sneaks out America's technology secrets," *BBC News,* 2023, January 16, https://www.bbc.co.uk/news/world-asia-china-64206950.

Yukiko Fukasaku, "Foreign Influence in the Development of Shipbuilding Technology and the Education of Engineers in Japan, 1855–1940," *History and Technology* 12, no. 2 (1995): 119 - 127, https://doi.org/10.1080/07341519508581879.

迅风知识产权, "**董云庭率性直言：中国**专利90%**都是垃圾**," March 15, 2019, https://www.sohu.com/a/301468372_100156202.

On Responsibility, Institutions, and Misattribution of Blame

I want to make something else explicit, because ambiguity here would be unfair and inaccurate.

Any references in this book to intelligence agencies, public services, or state institutions are not accusations, and they are not attributions of blame. The incidents and patterns described in these pages have absolutely nothing to do with them.

I say this very sincerely, I hold a great deal of respect and admiration for public servants, law enforcement, intelligence professionals, and institutional workers. I would most likely like them very much as people. They operate within systems, hierarchies, and chains of command that are not of their own making. Expecting individuals within such structures to independently veto instructions based on personal judgment is not how functioning governments, institutions, or societies work.

If I imagine myself in their position, receiving an order, I would not expect to be able to say, "I disagree with this, so I will not do it." That is not a moral failing. It is the reality of organized systems. Responsibility does not lie at the level of execution.

For that reason, even if I were to have experienced pressure of any kind, it would not be attributable to these institutions or the people within them. I do not blame them. I do not partially blame them. I do not indirectly blame them. I do not blame them one percent. I do not blame them 0.1 percent. I do not blame them at all. Literally nothing I have written is intended to place responsibility at their door.

When I use phrases such as "hidden forces" or "shadowy entities," I am not gesturing toward intelligence agencies, public servants, or national institutions. I am referring to something else

entirely, something more globally active. It's the same underlying force that appears to be eroding Western nations, and something that seems to thrive precisely by remaining unnamed and by allowing blame to fall on those not responsible.

Author's Statement of Intent

I have always wished well even for those who have wronged me. The message that runs throughout this work is one of forgiveness and mutual understanding. Every person, regardless of background, is capable of goodness and redemption. The injustices I describe are not rooted in any ethnicity, religion, or nation. They are manifestations of harmful mindsets and behaviours that can arise anywhere, and in anyone.

I believe that works like this, over the long term, do far more to advance peace and mutual understanding than efforts that dilute or obscure the truth. The ultimate aim is harmony and mutual understanding, even in the presence of flaws and past mistakes. The goal is coexistence, the end of harm, and a future in which everyone can live without fear or hatred.

The solutions outlined in this book are intended as safeguards against potential subversive actions against the West. Everyone has the right to defend themselves, and that defence should begin and end with safeguarding.

The Label of "Nazi"

I was recently reading a book, which I will not name, and reflecting on its arguments alongside the broader public climate, media narratives, and recurring controversies, my views might be met with resentment. In this context, even expressing appreciation for Western nations, something I have always done openly, could be enough to invite opposition or cancellation. I would like to place that concern in perspective.

First, valuing a community, society, culture, and ultimately a heritage, country, and civilization are not equivalent to Nazism. Every nation outside the West, and indeed every society throughout history, has encouraged some form of cultural affinity and collective pride. It is therefore reasonable that Western societies, like all others, should be able to appreciate themselves, take pride in their achievements, and acknowledge the contributions they have made to humanity. That, in itself, does not equate to Nazism.

Second, while genuine antisemitism exists and must be taken seriously, it should not be reflexively linked to the recognition of Western achievements or to the appreciation of ordinary people within Western societies. Conflating these distinct ideas risks making constructive solutions more difficult. This term has lately way too liberally been used. Nazism and "white supremacism" have to be disconnected from Western praise. You cannot continue to tell people to hate themselves.

At the same time, legitimate concerns of Jewish communities should be recognised and addressed thoughtfully. The West has historically been a place where many groups, including Jewish communities, have been able to thrive, and there is every reason to expect that to continue. Constructive engagement becomes difficult when discussions are framed in absolutist or accusatory terms.

Disagreement is natural in any society, but framing one group as uniquely beyond constructive and respectful disagreement can delay genuine harmony. I say this with immense focus on harmony and mutual respect.

Finally, it is neither realistic nor reasonable to expect individuals to make unconditional, blanket, and special exceptions for any country. This applies equally to Israel as it does to any other nation. Personal views will naturally include both agreement and disagreement, depending on the issue. While I personally hold respect for Israel, as I do for all countries, that respect cannot be unconditional or immune from critical thought. There are nearly 200 countries in the world, and no single one can reasonably be exempt from the same standards of evaluation that apply to all others. That said, I have not been vocal on such matters and do not intend to be in the future; my position is one of general respect and measured consideration.

I do, however, have immense concerns for my personal well-being concerning things discussed above. I am deliberately avoiding going into further detail now and intend to keep it that way. However, I do have immense concerns. This is not a section I originally wanted in this book, but I felt it necessary to acknowledge it briefly. In future editions, I expect this section (roughly 2 pages) to be removed.

In ordinary circumstances, my position has always been to approach issues with fairness, often going further than necessary to consider multiple perspectives, and that remains my intention for decades into the future for matters discussed above.

ABOUT THE AUTHOR

Ahsan Gill was born in Pakistan and raised in an abusive family. Later, he endured persecution that stretched across continents. He ultimately found a fragile refuge in the West, the very civilization he had long admired for its contributions to humanity.

Having worked as a writer at a think tank institute and as a marketer on online platforms, he now turns his attention to his most personal and urgent work. In this book, he documents the persecution he endured while attempting to understand the broader civilizational patterns surrounding it.

This book is not merely a testimony. It is also an expression of love for the West, a call for resilience in the face of potential subversion, and an appeal for understanding, reconciliation, and forgiveness.